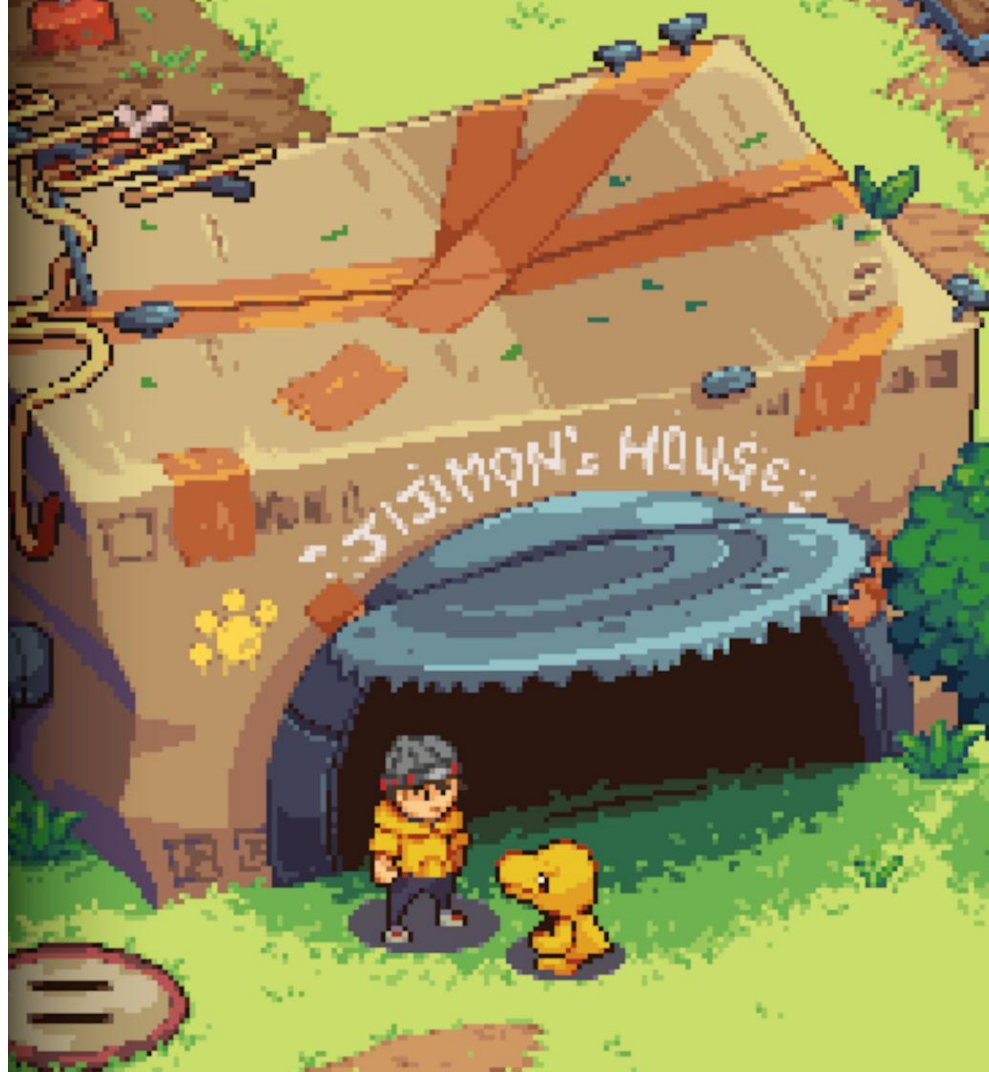


# A DIGIMON WORLD STORY



BY YOSHI\_UMR (2026)

COVER ART BY  
RYAN KAHOS

This is a non-profit fan-fiction about the PlayStation game Digimon World (1999).  
IP belongs to Bandai Namco Entertainment.



yoshi\_UMR

## **A Digimon World Story**

*by yoshi\_UMR (2026)*

**DISCLAIMER:** This is a non-profit fan-fiction about the PlayStation game Digimon World (1999).

IP belongs to Bandai Namco Entertainment.

Cover art by RyanKamos

---

### **Prologue**

All too familiar sounds – laughter, yelling, blending in with the noises of the city. He ran – not with haste but with joy.

“Heeeey!”, he yelled.

“Oh, you're here”, a friend responded.

He stopped, out of breath, but in awe. “Wow, Metalgreymon and Metalmamemon!”

Moving in 2D on the flickering screens of the kids' Virtual Pets...

Time went by, as the kids went back and forth - barely noticing that it was about time to go home.

Sun setting in the distance, he exited the elevator, slowly walking towards the familiar door. Not ringing because nobody was home, as per usual.

He saw a note on the table. It's from Mom. As always, she left some food in the fridge but she will be getting home late again - she is working hard but still takes good care of her son. Still, he would love to speak more to her about his favorite thing, Digimon.

He was thinking to himself: “another dull day gone by. Same classes, same stares, same people saying and doing the same things. Nobody really gets me. Not like my Digimon do.”

As the word “Digimon” crossed his mind, he suddenly heard a sound. Where was it coming from? And why? He was home alone, wasn't he?

Trying to locate the source of the sound, he remembered that he left his Virtual Pet device at home - it must have been coming from that toy. But what were those sounds? He had never heard his Digimon toy make sounds like this before.

He opened the door to his room and confirmed: “It's Digimon!”

But...something was off!

All of a sudden, the screen flickered.

A little creature chirped, its dots flickering like it could see the boy's face. He knew it didn't, of course. It was just a game. Just data. But sometimes... it felt alive.

He frowned, leaning forward. The pixels twisted, distorted, the creature stretching into static - inarticulately babbling. The device buzzed on the table, harder and harder, until it felt like it might burst.

“What the...?”



A light flooded the room - it swallowed him whole.

For an instant, there was nothing. No floor beneath him, no air in his lungs. Just falling...falling through color, through sound, through a storm of voices calling his name. Or was it even his name? He couldn't tell.

Then, with a thud, he landed...

Grass.

Bright, impossibly green grass stretched around him, shimmering like glass in the sunlight. The sky was a deeper blue than any sky he'd ever seen. It felt sharper, cleaner, wrongly perfect.

He sat up, heart hammering, and realized this wasn't his world anymore.

"It worked, Jiji", he heard a young voice yell.  
Before he had time to catch his bearings, he heard another voice from up ahead.

"Welcome."

The voice was old, gravelly, but warm. He turned to see a short figure approaching, beard trailing down past his chest, staff tapping the earth as he walked.

The creature was like nothing from Earth - yet somehow familiar. Even though he had never seen such a being before.

"Thi-this must be a dream", the boy said to himself.

"This is not a dream", a small, pink creature snarlingly yelled at him.

"Wait, you...you are Tokomon, a Digimon! I got it, it's a very realistic dream!", he went on.

The elder Digimon responded: "this is not a dream, but it isn't real either, this is our world, the world of us Digimon, and my name is Jijimon."

"Jijimon?", the boy grunted, "I don't know any Digimon like that".

"There are more Digimon than you know of", Jijimon responded.

The boy seemed to have a less confused look on his face now. "Oh, I remember, I got sucked into my Digimon device and must have been stranded here!"

"Do you know why you are here? Our world...is breaking."

The boy struggled to stand. "Breaking? I...I don't understand!"

"All around us, Digimon are losing themselves", Jijimon said, eyes heavy with sorrow. "They forget who they are. They fight. They flee. Our city, once full of life, now stands nearly empty. Some even forgot the city's language. Without help, File Island will wither away."

The boy shook his head. "Why me? I...I'm just..."

"You were chosen", Jijimon interrupted gently. "Your bond with Digimon, though unseen in your world, is strong. Strong enough to call you here. If you raise a partner, guide them, and restore File City... we may yet survive. And by the way, did you know that you speak Digimon?"

"What do you mean?", the boy asked. "I am simply speaking English!"

"To us it sounds like Digimon" a smaller Digimon confirmed.

"Turn around, and you will understand", Jijimon promised.



The grass rustled. A reptile-like foot moved forward, nails white and sharp, skin a mix of orange and yellow. Two bright, green eyes blinked up at him.

“Raaawrrrr Rawwwrr” it yelled.

The boy blinked. “Is that...?”

“Agumon”, Jijimon said, smiling faintly. “It seems you already have a partner.”

The reptile-like Digimon hopped with a happy squeal.

The boy bent forward, hands trembling. The creature was warm. Real. Alive.

His throat tightened. “...You’re my partner?”

Agumon gave a delighted growl in answer.

Jijimon’s staff struck the ground with a soft thud. “The journey will not be easy. You will train together. Fight together. Learn together. And yes... you will suffer loss. But if you succeed, File City will shine again.”

The boy’s heart was pounding so hard he could barely think. But when he looked back at Agumon - so curious, so eager - something inside him settled.

He nodded. “Okay. I’ll do my best. I think, with Agumon’s help we can do it!”

Jijimon’s eyes glimmered. “Then your story begins.”

The boy turned around, eager to explore this unknown world as Jijimon yelled: “Wait up, there is still something...”

But the boy didn’t hear him anymore - too excited he was about what was to come, or was he nervous?

The Digimon squeaked once more, cheerful, unaware of the burden that was ahead.

And for the first time in his life, the boy wasn’t alone.

---

## **Chapter One**

The city wasn’t much of a city.

When Jijimon had led him here, the boy expected - well, something bigger. Instead, File City looked like a forgotten village. Cracked stone paths. Empty houses. An eerie stillness that made him wonder if anyone had lived here at all.

But Jijimon had promised it wasn’t always like this. The Digimon had left, scattered, driven by confusion and fear. Now it was up to him to bring them back.

The boy wasn’t sure he believed it, but one thing was certain - he had Agumon.

The small reptile Digimon walked beside him, squeaking happily as if oblivious to the crumbling city. His partner’s joy was infectious. For the first time since arriving, the boy felt a little less lost.

That optimism didn’t last long.

“Rawr,” Agumon growled, pointing at his mouth.

The boy blinked. “Wait, you...eat? You’re hungry?”

“Raaawr Rawr!”, Agumon continued.





"I'm sorry little guy, I don't have any food. But maybe I can find something for you - Oh, wait!", he spotted something in the distance - it was right behind Jijimon's house so he couldn't see it at first. The boy approached an area that was a sort of crop field - but what he found buried in the soil weren't any vegetables or crops at all. Instead, it looked like they were growing pieces of meat like they were crops?

"What?", he yelled, "how does this work?", as he remembered again that he was in an entirely different world, so anything might be possible.

"Would you like some meat?" it suddenly rang out to him.  
"Who, who asked? O...oh!"

He spotted a small, plant-like Digimon waiting by the fields. It was Tanemon!  
"We are growing meat here, why do you look so surprised?", Tanemon asked.  
"Oh, it's nothing", the boy said with confidence.

"Jiji and I are giving you three pieces of meat per day - it's food for your Digimon. If you run out of food, you will have to search for mushrooms outside the city, in Native Forest.  
"I understand", said the boy as he accepted the three pieces of meat.

"Okay, here", he said, holding a piece in his hands. Agumon excitedly swallowed the meat in a single gulp. Then he hopped and yelled with delight after.  
The boy couldn't help but grin. "Guess I did that right."

A moment later, Agumon squeaked again - this time in distress.

The boy's smile vanished. "What's wrong?"  
Agumon waddled quickly to the side and squatted.  
"Oh no!"

It was too late.

The boy gagged, stumbling back. "You've gotta be kidding me!"  
Agumon looked back at him with the most innocent eyes, as if proud of what he had accomplished.

He pinched the bridge of his nose. "So this is what Jijimon meant by 'raising' a Digimon..."

It was messy, awkward, and - if he was honest - kind of funny. He laughed in spite of himself. Agumon growled happily, bouncing as if proud of making him smile.

The rest of the day passed in a blur.

He discovered a training ground, called the Green Gym where strange machines tested Agumon's strength and speed. The exercises left his partner exhausted, but also sharper, tougher. The boy realized he wasn't just watching anymore - he was part of the process, cheering Agumon on, making choices that shaped what he would become. He also learned the hard way, not to touch that "bonus try" the devices offered, as he quickly discovered that these machines were rigged. "I guess some things are the same as in the real world, huh?", he whispered to himself.

After a good few hours of training, the boy and Agumon felt ready to finally leave the city and explore Native Forest, as Jijimon encouraged him to do.



They stepped out of the Green Gym, but something was watching them - and suddenly running at them.

"Who are you?", he called.

From the distance stepped a Digimon that looked very familiar, orange scales glinting in the sun, claws sharp, eyes fierce.

"Agumon...?", the boy yelled.

The lizard Digimon growled, tail lashing. "Get out of here! This is my turf!"

It seemed that Agumon felt threatened by the boy's Agumon's presence, who growled nervously - then realized that a battle couldn't be avoided anymore.

The boy's stomach twisted. A real battle? He had no idea what to do.

The hostile Agumon charged.

"Agumon, move!"

It seems like the training was not enough yet, as Agumon decided to run around and sometimes stare into the sun, as if he had forgotten that he was in the midst of a battle.

"I guess I will have to trust my Digimon and watch", the boy said to himself.

Suddenly, energy surged in Agumon's body, a faint glow surrounding him. The boy felt it - something shifting, something new.

"Spit Fire?", the boy yelled as he saw Agumon use his techniques to fend off the hostile Digimon.

Agumon repeatedly launched the spit fire attacks, striking the other Agumon square in the chest. The lizard staggered, eyes wide. And then, suddenly dropped to the floor. They had lost their consciousness.

The battle was won! Or, was it?

The opposing Agumon quickly got up again.

"Y-you're strong", Agumon muttered, breathing hard. "Maybe...you can really help this place..."

The boy stepped forward cautiously. "Then...come with us. Jijimon said the city needs Digimon like you."

Agumon hesitated, then nodded slowly. "Fine. I'll join. But only because you proved yourself."

With that, Agumon turned and headed toward File City.

The boy exhaled, knees trembling. His first battle - his first victory - and moreover, the first successful city recruitment.

"Asking won't hurt, we will keep trying", he eagerly shouted.

Agumon hopped proudly at his side, eyes shining with trust.

The boy smiled, reaching to pat his partner's head. "Guess we really are in this together."

And just like that, the city didn't feel so empty anymore.

---

## **Chapter Two**



The sun had climbed higher in the sky, painting File City in a warm golden light. The remains of stone paths crisscrossed between empty houses, and the faint sound of birds echoed from distant trees. For the first time, the boy felt a glimmer of hope - maybe, just maybe, this place could be restored.

Agumon bounced beside him, tail swishing with energy. "Raaaargh!", he growled playfully, snapping at a stray leaf. The boy laughed.

"You'll eat that later, don't worry", he said, tucking a snack into his pocket. He didn't know how long they would be out today, and Agumon was still learning the balance between battle, training, and...everything else.

As they walked toward the city outskirts, they discovered a beach-like area known as the Coela Point. The sun was almost setting and Agumon seemed to be getting tired but they spotted a circling shadow swimming by the shore.

"I know you are sleepy, Agumon, but can we check out this shadow over there?", he asked. Agumon nodded - despite his exhaustion, he knew how important this was to his tamer.

As they approached the shadow, it began to swim in circles faster and faster as if it anticipated the unknown visitors.

The boy and Agumon took a leap back as the aquatic creature showed its face.

"Coelamon!", the boy shouted!

"Haha, have you been looking for me?", Coelamon responded in a friendly voice.

"Yes, now that you mention it, we have"

"Let me guess - since the bridge up north is broken, you are looking for a way to cross the river, am I right?", Coelamon confidently guessed.

The boy and Agumon nodded in unison - while smiling hopefully at Coelamon.

"Okay, okay, I will help you! I am calling my friends and you can use our heads as a bridge to cross the river."

The boy started trembling a little but he couldn't make out if it was fear or excitement. It was probably a little bit of both.

"Let's do it!", he yelled, Agumon beside him hopping around eagerly.

They had to overcome their fears or else they wouldn't be able to make any progress.

As Coelamon's friends arrived, the boy and Agumon carefully hopped across the river - and with each hop, they felt the climate change faster and faster. The air started to feel thick - almost like a brick wall. It was humid, hot and many different, vibrant sounds could be heard in the distance. There was no doubt, they arrived in Tropical Jungle - an entirely new region.

Thankfully, Agumon was used to hot temperatures, and despite the humidity in the air, he didn't want to show any signs of slowing down, so he tried to encourage the boy by walking up ahead.

"Wait, Agumon, where are you going?", yelled the boy. "Hmm, looks like mangroves that I know from the real world! W-wait, something is over there!"

They slowly approached a small, green, amphibious looking creature.

"I know you, you are Betamon", the boy said with confidence.

Indeed they had encountered a Betamon in this mangrove forest, but they looked quite lost and confused. The boy felt like they needed help so he walked up closer to the Digimon.



"Sniff sniff, aaaaahh...This smell is so familiar", Betamon said once the boy was close to them.  
"You smell of File City - the old place. I once lived there but I don't have any memory of moving away or what happened after I had left", Betamon told the boy with sorrow in their voice.

"Well, we are trying to rebuild the city by recruiting more and more residents, so why don't you join us in the city? Do you remember how to get there?", the boy asked in a hopeful manner.

"Yes, I do remember the way now! That familiar smell must have brought back my memory, thank you so much! I will move back to the city and help everyone!", said Betamon as they waddled away. The boy and Agumon looked at each other and nodded in unison. They knew they had just achieved yet another milestone they could be proud of.

As optimistic as ever, the heroes explored the eastern part of the jungle and found themselves in a strange area. A sign - barely visible and quite run-down - said in decayed letters "Amida Forest - Trespassers keep out!"

"That sign looks pretty old, don't you think, Agumon? We will be fine, I don't sense any danger", said the boy as he approached the entrance area of this so-called Amida Forest. He might have been a little too confident as he kept on walking.

"What's with this layout?", referring to three parallel paths that looked quite similar to one another. But then he remembered he had seen something like this before.

In the real world!

It looked like it was designed to resemble Amidakuji, *which is a Japanese method of lottery, designed to create random pairings between two sets of any number of things - also known as Ghost Leg.*

All of a sudden, a loud alarm signal rang out. The boy and Agumon almost jumped out of their skins - they did not expect anything to happen when entering the forest. As their bodies froze in fear, a voice could be heard from some sort of loudspeaker system somewhere: "Trespassers Alert, I will shoot!"

"Shoot?", the boy yelled. "What is going on here?"

He looked back at Agumon but the small reptile Digimon seemed too flustered and didn't know how to react.

It came back - the feeling the boy had right after he arrived in File City for the first time - fear of the unknown, not knowing if he would be harmed. But did it feel the same?

"No, no I can't be scared right now. I have Agumon by my side and I need to show that I am willing to do whatever it takes to rescue this island. I have to be strong for everyone's sake!", the boy said to himself to fire himself up.

Indeed, he wasn't alone anymore. The feeling he knew all too well and that had haunted him for so many years was gone. No longer did he feel alone. With Agumon by his side he learned about an entirely new side of himself that was hidden away in the dark for too long.

Courage - that's all he was thinking of at that moment.

And so he mustered up all his strength and stepped forward into the unknown, despite the explicit warning issued by that amplified voice.

"Even if they shoot us, we can still dodge and hide behind those boulders", the boy said to Agumon as they walked on ahead.

A few steps in, the boy started to wonder: "wait, why is nothing happening? Was that a false alarm? It looks like everything is fine and there is nothing to worry about after all".





He started to laugh: "haha, and moments ago we were scared like little children, I can't believe it. Oh, hey? What's over there?"

He spotted some sort of item laying on the floor. It looked like a duck-shaped sculpture and turned out to be a Portable Potty.

"Great! This is going to come in handy when there is no bathroom around and Agumon has to do his business." As he was saying these lines, he sensed the vibrations in the air change fast.

Something was fast approaching, too fast in fact.

"What the...?"

The boy couldn't even react in time and found himself knocked down by some sort of energy beam.

"Urrgh", he moaned. "Agumon, are you okay?"

But Agumon laid there, motionless.

"What just happened? Agumon, please say something!"

What actually happened was nothing less than a straight shot of what seemed to be a bullet made from solar energy.

Agumon had thrown himself in front of his tamer to save him - at the last possible second. However, this meant that Agumon took the full force of the shot and appeared to be knocked out.

It all happened so fast that the boy didn't even have a chance at reacting.

He had to react quickly to get out of dodge so he tried to drag his partner close to a nearby boulder to seek shelter. This proved to be quite the tough task as Agumon wasn't exactly a lightweight.

Adrenaline started to kick in, and the boy mustered up all of his strength to drag his Digimon to safety.

"This seems to be a blind spot, I think we are safe for now. Damn, I should have taken the warning signs more seriously. This is all my fault and Agumon risked his life to save mine. Agumon, please wake up, I am sorry, this is all because of my recklessness."

Tears started to roll down the boy's cheeks as he realized that all the items he saw on the floor must have been carefully placed there to act as bait for greedy trespassers. "Who would do something like this and why?", the boy thought to himself.

The tears kept on coming but at the same time the boy remembered that he had received some useful items from one of File City's residents. He never bothered to look closely at them but he was getting desperate to find anything that could help him wake up Agumon.

Luckily, he found some recovery disks that were specifically there to heal a Digimon when it took too much damage.

"This has to work", yelled the boy - still in tears - as he tried to use the recovery item on his partner. As soon as the item came in contact with Agumon's body, it started to glow and dissipate.

"Did it work?", the boy said with a frail voice.

At that moment, Agumon's claws and feet started moving - just barely - but they moved.

He slowly opened his eyes and seemed to have regained consciousness.

"Agumon!", the boy yelled with relief in his voice. "You're awake, are you hurt? I'm so sorry, I was so reckless - it's all my fault!"

But Agumon immediately shook his head as if he wanted to say: "no, it's okay, don't worry".

The healing disc seemed to have worked wonders because Agumon was already getting up on his own and regained the sharp look in his eyes.

He looked like he spotted something in the distance and tried to make the boy aware of it.



"What are you trying to tell me?", the boy asked. "Oh? I see, there are symbols at the end of the path. I can see an X symbol on the left-hand side and an O symbol on the middle path. Unfortunately, from where we are right now, I can't see what's at the end of the right path. But if this forest really imitates the Amidakuji game, then I think I know what we have to do, Agumon!"

Agumon was already hopping around again, excited for the boy's realization!

"Listen Agumon, I think I finally figured out how to avoid getting shot again, do you trust me?"

Agumon nodded eagerly.

"Then here's what we have to do! We were shot because this forest seems to follow the rules of Amidakuji. This means, we are not allowed to simply walk in a straight line. We absolutely have to make a turn whenever it is possible to avoid getting shot. That way we will be in the shooter's blind spot. If we keep doing that, we can slowly advance and eventually reach the end of the path. There is a catch however. I do not know what happens when we reach those symbols! My best guess would be that the X marks a failed attempt, while an O marks a successful one. I can only confirm this once I see the symbol at the end of the right-hand path. Does this make sense?"

It looked like Agumon didn't quite follow but that seemed to be no problem at all. He simply was excited to see the boy all motivated and eager to solve this puzzle.

This forest was only another roadblock they had to overcome - this couldn't have possibly been the end of their journey.

And so they followed through with the boy's plan.

They stormed into the middle path and saw a possibility to turn right without taking too many steps.

"Great, let's take a right there, Agumon. If my theory is correct, we will not be shot this time!"

And so they ran forward and took a right - then made it to the next blind spot and that's when the boy was sure of it. His plan might work!

As they reached the safe space, he was then able to see the symbol at the end of the right-hand path.

"Yes, just as I suspected, it's another X symbol! This means that the middle path which shows an O symbol is the correct one."

Luckily, they entered the correct path right from the beginning as they would make it to the goal by simply walking the right-hand path, then taking another turn left to then finally end up on the middle path.

They would then use that path to make it to the finish line without taking another hit.

"Oh yeah, we did it Agumon! I am so glad this is over, or is it over? What do we win?"

As the boy looked around curiously, the path in front of him opened up and appearing in front of him was an imposing figure.

"H-hello, may I ask who you are?", asked the boy.

"You have done well", said the creature that resembled a fairy-tale-like animal. A man-horse!

"My name is Centarumon, I am sorry I shot you both. It was a test!", the Digimon explained.

"A test?" the stressed out boy yelled.

"I had to make sure you have what it takes to save this island. It doesn't take strength alone, you also need to be smart and be able to assess each situation wisely."

"So, did we pass?", the boy then asked.

"You passed with flying colors. I will make my way towards File City. With your help, I think we can save this island!", said Centarumon as he galloped away.

"Wow, I think we are starting to become famous, Agumon", said the boy with joy in his face.



They have indeed overcome this intimidating challenge and could be proud of their accomplishments.

Agumon pushed for the boy to continue walking despite looking visibly exhausted. It was about to get dark, too, so he decided to head west again and rest up in File City. They could explore the area beyond Amida Forest some other time, he decided.

There was one more worry in the boy's mind however. How would they get back to the city, when the Digimon bridge north of Coela Point is still broken?

As they approached the river, that worry turned into a non-factor. The bridge was magically fixed and looked as good as new.

"Wow, I guess File City's residents really put in some work and fixed the bridge in no time, now we can get back easily!", said the boy with excitement.

However, crossing the bridge they encountered another issue. The city's east entrance was blocked by some overgrown plants, so there was no way in, at least not from the eastern direction.

"I guess, we will have to walk all the way around then, but I think that might be too much for today, Agumon, you had better rest here", said the boy with worry in his voice.

So they decided to camp in Native Forest by the river.

And thus, another day went by - a day filled with adventure and learning.

The next morning, the boy and Agumon set out toward File City for a brief rest and most importantly to see the city's progress while they were gone and recruiting new residents. In the distance they noticed a few Coelamon swimming around in the river. The exact group of Coelamon who had helped them before!

They decided to go there again to say thank you but before the boy could say anything, one of the Coelamon told him: "hey, I would like you to help me this time! By rebuilding the city, you are saving the island and everyone who is living there. In that case, I will move to the city and offer my services as well!"

Before the boy could even react, Coelamon already began swimming south.

"Wait!!", yelled the boy. "The city is north of here", but Coelamon didn't seem to mind the boy's words. It seemed they had some other business to take care of first, before moving to the city but that didn't matter. What did matter was the fact that they had found yet another new resident for the city. It was now time to go back and rest up a little - or so they thought.

On their way, they passed an area called Kunemon's bed.

"Hmmm", murmured the boy. "I think we have been here before and I recall seeing a certain Digimon hanging around that bush. Ye-Yeah, it's right over there!"

The boy ran ahead and right behind him his curious Agumon. They spotted a bright-yellow bug curled up on a green bush. Was it asleep? Or was it trying to hide from potential danger?

Its many legs moving in perfect rhythm. Its mandibles snapped, glinting in the sunlight. The boy's stomach twisted.

In fact, that Digimon simply was in need of help - or so it claimed.

"Hello, I'm Kunemon", said the worm-like Digimon. "Do you have something to eat? I'm starving!"

The boy - speechless by what he had just heard - simply stared at Kunemon and forgot to answer its question.

"M-meat! I have meat, would you like some?", The boy then responded to Kunemon's request.

"Aw yes", yelled Kunemon. You could say it had a sparkle in its eyes upon hearing the word "meat" but in fact, Kunemon does not have eyes.

Nevertheless, as the boy pulled a piece of meat out of his bag, Kunemon was already getting very



close to him and snatched that piece of meat from his hands in an instant.

"Chomp, mhhh, wow, that was delicious", said the Kunemon as it devoured the food at a single bite.

"Now, let's battle"

"What?", yelled the boy. "Why? I just helped you out and you want to fight us?"

Kunemon did not even react to what the boy said, instead it already launched a dangerous thundercloud-like attack on Agumon who took a hit.

However, Agumon got up quickly and didn't hesitate to fight back. It was sink or swim - no matter if they just helped out that Digimon. The situation had changed. They were enemies now, so they would have to act accordingly. It was the digital world after all, and for most Digimon it's survival of the fittest.

The boy came to that realization rather quickly, so he shook off his final doubts and yelled in support of Agumon. "Defeat it, you can do it, Agumon! Show them who's the best!"

A few moments later, Agumon seemed to have figured out Kunemon's attacking pattern and quickly turned around the battle. And a couple of spit fire attacks later, Kunemon was beaten!

"See? You shouldn't bite the hand that feeds you", yelled the boy at the defeated Digimon.

"I'm sorry", Kunemon responded. "I got too excited from eating that delicious grub. Please let me help you out this time".

"Do you know where File City lies?", the boy interfered. "If yes, please move there and help us save this island."

"Yes, I do know the way. Ok, it's decided, I am going to help you", said Kunemon and made its way towards the city.

Interestingly enough, it went the same path that the boy and Agumon just came from so the boy thought the Digimon was going to hit the same roadblock they had encountered.

"Ah, it's going to find a way somehow", the boy said with a smug face - he realized that they had just made another friend in a short amount of time.

The heroes made their way south only to find a strange tree with something that looked like a door. They approached that door and discovered some letters engraved in the wood.

"Nobody's here, go away!", the letters said.

The boy was thinking: "hmm, strange, maybe somebody lives here!"

But since they couldn't find any other clues, they decided to walk further west. The faint scent of lake water was in the air but a few wild Goblimon were blocking the path towards the water.

The boy said: "oh no, it's a trio and they don't look like they are in a good mood. I don't think Agumon has enough energy to handle all three of them. I guess we will come back here later."

But as they made their way up north again to return to File City, they noticed a strange plant in the thicket. In fact, it seemed fairly odd so the boy decided to take a closer look.

"Hmm, wait, was it moving just now, or was that my imagination?"

The green and pink-ish plant looked too suspicious to simply be a regular plant but then again, they were in the Digital World, so anything odd might as well be fairly normal for Digimon standards. Nonetheless, the boy tried to touch that plant carefully.

"A flower", he heard something or somebody whisper.

"What?", yelled the boy as he moved closer and closer to that strange plant.



"I am a flower", he heard it say again.

"It definitely just talked! This is no ordinary plant!", said the boy as he nervously touched the plant again.

"I said, I am a flower, aren't you listening?"

Agumon barked. "Raaaargh!" and the boy looked back at Agumon who had already gotten in position to fight.

As the boy turned around again he saw that plant turn around and run towards Agumon to attack.

"So it was a Digimon after all...wait, I know this one, it's Palmon!"

The Rookie-level Digimon Palmon are known for their peaceful and shy nature, however when provoked, they will not hesitate to use their poison ivy attack to numb their opponents.

"Agumon, beware of their claws, they are poisonous!", the boy warned his partner.

But Agumon had already analyzed the situation and quickly fired one spit fire attack after another. His enemy was a plant-like Digimon after all, so the fire attacks worked wonders against this Palmon.

Palmon realized they had to change their strategy. Close range moves wouldn't work on this fire spitting Digimon so Palmon decided to fire a ranged attack called Water Blit. A bubble of water, rapidly moving towards the enemy.

"Watch out", the boy yelled. "This is dangerous!"

He knew from his Virtual Pet games that Agumon had a weakness to water and ice moves in particular.

But Agumon was unfazed.

Despite the powerful move that Palmon had just unleashed, the reptile Digimon was ready to fire his finishing maneuver to end this fight immediately. Agumon had to get in position and required his tamer's support to prepare this strong attack.

Another smart dodge by Agumon and his finisher was ready. "Use Baby Flame", shouted the boy towards Agumon.

A rather big ball of fire formed in the reptile-Digimon's mouth and was fired towards Palmon, like shot out of a cannon.

Palmon took the full hit and fell down immediately. It was simply too much to take for a small plant Digimon like this.

As Palmon laid on the ground, defeated, the boy and Agumon - while celebrating their victory - heard the small Digimon say a few words.

"I hate fighting!"

The boy stopped celebrating and paid full attention to Palmon now as he realized he could ask Palmon to join File City.

"You don't have to fight in the city! It's peaceful there!"

"Really?", said the Palmon with sparkly eyes. "So, I can move there right now?"

"Yes, of course", the boy responded. "You will be most welcome there."

"Great, it's decided then! I will move to the city", said Palmon to the boy, skipping away towards File City.

And just like that, they had made another new friend and more importantly, took another big step towards saving the island.





It was finally time to return to the city and check out its current state. The heroes were excited to find out what had changed after recruiting some new Digimon. So they made their way towards File City.

“But let’s be careful,” the boy said. “Some Digimon on the way might not be friendly yet.”

After a careful, yet swift hike north, they finally reached File City and it already had changed quite a bit.

With each Digimon who joined, the city felt a little more alive. Broken pathways seemed less empty, and abandoned houses less forlorn. Birds chirped louder. The wind carried faint laughter across the streets. The boy felt it in his chest: File City was waking up, one Digimon at a time.

It was time to explore the new facilities in the city!

At first they noticed that File City finally had an item shop - and it seemed there were two shopkeepers already working there. Betamon and Coelamon!

“Hey, friends”, the two Digimon shouted! “Look at this cool new shop. We are selling and buying useful things so stop by regularly and please bring more Digimon so the business can thrive.”

This opportunity was too good to let it pass, so the boy decided to use his recently acquired battle funds to stock up on some very important items. Healing disks, meat and a very special item. The Autopilot. This item would let the heroes return to the city at an instant and this would prove to be extremely useful later on.

Next, they noticed a bigger building south of the item shop. It looked like a clinic and upon entering through the front door, it turned out to be exactly that.

“Wow, this looks just like in my world”, the boy couldn’t help but brag.

The hospital was run by Centarumon, the Digimon who had recently tested the boy and Agumon in a challenging puzzle.

“Do you like my medical facility?”, Centarumon asked the boy. “I will treat your Digimon partner if he gets sick. I can also get rid of his tiredness. On top of that, you can buy medicine here, so stop by if you are in need of that. However, the treatment won’t be for free, it is a business after all. But don’t worry, it won’t cost you much.”

“This is great, Centarumon,” said the boy. “Now we can treat injured and sick Digimon in the city!”

“It’s my pleasure”, said Centarumon as the boy and Agumon left the building to explore more of the city.

The boy realized that he had yet to pick up his daily meat rations so he made his way up north to find a new farmer at the meat farm behind Jijimon’s house.

It was Palmon! The shy Digimon had stepped up to become the new leader of the farm.

“Hi my friends, look I have increased the size of our meat field”, Palmon yelled at the boy and Agumon once they saw them.

“From now on, you will receive three pieces of giant meat every day. If that’s not enough, you can also buy more from me at only 500 bits per piece!”.

The boy thanked Palmon for the meat, however didn’t mention that the 500 bit for a single piece of giant meat might have been a little too expensive.

Nonetheless, it was time to talk to Jijimon and see what the elder had to say.

Before entering Jijimon’s house, they spotted Yuramon in front of it and talked to the baby Digimon.

“I have heard some rumors recently, wanna hear?”, Yuramon said eagerly. The boy nodded.

“Did you know that there is an invisible bridge north-east of the tropical jungle that leads to the great canyon?”



"An invisible bridge?", the boy responded. He was quite surprised hearing about this but at the same time he seemed to have gotten used to the strange things of this world. So he believed Yuramon and moved on to enter Jijimon's house, keeping the information in the back of his mind. Agumon growled softly, but there was a gleam in his eye. The boy chuckled. "All right, buddy. Let's see what the elder has to say."

"You are back! Great!", said Jijimon upon seeing the boy and Agumon enter the house.

"Step by step, Digimon by Digimon, they are beginning to reclaim their former lives - and they are leading the charge. and it's all thanks to you. But there is still a lot to be done so we can't rest just yet."

"I know", said the boy. "Don't worry, leave it to us."

"I think it's best if you go west and explore the Drill Tunnel. I have heard that the Drimogemon in there might be in need of help." advised Jijimon.

"Got it, that's where we will be headed next, then", the boy responded. "Are you ready, Agumon?"

"Raaargh", Agumon growled with a happy voice as he fell to the floor - eyes closed.

"Agumon? Agumon? Are you okay?", the boy yelled in panic. "Oh, you're just tired".

He realized that Agumon simply was too exhausted to move out immediately so he decided to go to sleep right then and there.

The day began quietly, with only the soft rustling of leaves and the distant chirping of birds. File City was slowly coming to life, the faint hum of activity echoing through its paths. The boy tightened his satchel straps and glanced at his partner Digimon.

"Ready to check out Drill Tunnel?", he asked.

He remembered Jijimon mentioned the day before that some Digimon might need help there.

Agumon growled affirmatively, tail wagging.

On their way to the tunnels, they passed a narrow cliff but the view they got from there was magnificent.

"Wow!", said the boy enthusiastically. "This must be Dragon Eye Lake over there! it looks so large from here".

As they approached the entrance of Drill Tunnel, the boy noticed a sign on top. "Drill Tunnel", it said. There was no doubt, their next adventure awaited them inside.

"Shall we go, Agumon?", the boy asked his trusty companion.

Agumon growled with excitement. And so they entered this new area.

The tunnels were dark and narrow, carved into the rocky hillside. Sunlight barely reached the entrance, casting long shadows. As they stepped inside, a sudden vibration rattled the ground beneath their feet.

"What's that?", the boy whispered.

From the darkness ahead, a Drimogemon burst forth, claws scraping against the stone as they dug frantically. Chunks of rock flew everywhere, and the boy barely leapt aside in time.

Agumon barked a warning. "Raaaargh!"

Drimogemon paused, turning their big eyes toward them. "Today we're digging, tomorrow we're digging, it's so much fun! He, who are you? A human? It's going to take a long time until this tunnel is open! Go on and explore the other tunnels if you want."

So they walked in a different direction and what they found was something that resembled a residential area - inside the drill tunnel of course.

"Oh, so this must be where the Drimogemon eat, sleep and take breaks!", said the boy.



"Wait, what is going on over there?"

The boy spotted another Drimogemon, but this specimen was not digging any tunnels. Instead they were wallowing on the floor as if possessed by something.

At first, the boy was hesitant to approach the Digimon but he had to find out what was going on with that Drimogemon. So he carefully walked over and tried to start a conversation.

"Hey, are you okay?", he asked.

"It's hot!", yelled the Drimogemon. "So hot, do something, I can't take it anymore". They suddenly got up with a fierce look in their eyes.

"Oh no, this is not good", said the boy to his Agumon. "Agumon, looks like you have to calm this one down a little!"

Agumon charged, snapping at Drimogemon's claws, careful to avoid hurting them. He simply wanted to calm down the big Digimon but this proved to be a tough task.

The battle was tense. Drimogemon was powerful, but not malicious - only desperate. The boy realized that brute force alone wouldn't solve the problem.

"Agumon, flank them!", he shouted.

With careful coordination, Agumon managed to land a solid hit on Drimogemon. Step by step, claw by claw, the boy and Agumon worked together. Eventually, Drimogemon slowed, panting, their frantic movements halted.

The boy stepped forward cautiously. "We're not trying to hurt you. We just want to help."

Drimogemon blinked, then huffed, lowering their claws. Slowly, they moved aside and said "I got weird because of the heat, I'm sorry".

The boy asked: "don't worry about it, but tell me, why is it so hot in here?"

Drimogemon answered: "this tunnel is actually inside a volcano, but this can't be the only reason it's so hot. Maybe there is a fire somewhere nearby? But either way, we have to keep on digging."

The boy looked at Drimogemon and praised them for their hard working efforts. "You're doing a great job, don't give up!"

"You're nice!", said the Drimogemon. "Feel free to explore these tunnels for as long as you like".

And so, the boy and Agumon continued their exploration of the drill tunnel, just as Drimogemon had suggested. They once again passed by the other Drimogemon from earlier, but this time around, they noticed a huge pile of dirt nearby, so the boy went ahead to ask the digging Digimon how it was going.

"It's going well but it's still going to take a while", said the Drimogemon.

"I don't want to wait this long, can't we help you out?", the boy convincingly asked.

"You want to steal our fun? Well...maybe you can help us by getting rid of the dirt I have piled up over there. Take this cart, fill it up with dirt and dump it outside. For each roundtrip I will pay you some bits. Sounds good?"

The boy was thinking to himself: "hmm, by doing this we could speed up the digging process and at the same time get some training and even earn money."

He looked at Agumon and asked: "are you down to try it?"

Agumon was all eager and ready to take on this task so they began their roundtrips.

At first, it didn't seem like too much of a difficult task but after a couple of hours, Agumon was moving significantly slower than before.

That's when the boy knew they should call it a day.

"We're done for today, Drimogemon! My Agumon has to rest up!"

"Tired already? Haha", Drimogemon laughed. "Don't worry about it, you can come back later".



And so, the boy let Agumon rest up and later continued the work until Drimogemon said: “you really have been a big help, thank you! It won’t be long now until the tunnel is open. Go on and explore the island for a little while longer”.

The boy thanked Drimogemon for their kind words and made his way outside of the tunnel.

As they emerged into sunlight, they noticed something golden and shiny in the grass. It’s something they hadn’t seen before so it piqued their interest.

The boy approached the thing and it turned out to be a mushroom. However, it had a shiny, golden color so he picked it up. “This seems to be rare and valuable, better hold on to it for now”, he was thinking to himself.

“Okay Agumon, where do you think we should go next?”

Agumon ran ahead and he seemed to know exactly what their next destination was.

The boy, as if he understood what Agumon was thinking, said to his partner: “yes, I was thinking the same thing! Let’s find that invisible bridge!”.

And so, they made their way back to Tropical Jungle, remembering that Yuramon from File City had mentioned the bridge’s location to be north of that area.

---

### **Chapter Three**

The heroes stumbled across a strange looking graveyard-like area. The walls of that graveyard seemed oddly high and curved, almost kind of cartoonishly looking. There were no tombstones, however they spotted a few Digimon wandering around.

Tsukaimon and Soulmon - very befitting for a graveyard.

In the distance there was a large building that looked like a mansion of sorts. The boy was quite impressed by the sheer size of it. Its walls looked rather rundown and some windows were shattered but that building had something magical to it. Its presence alone was enough to draw the heroes closer and closer.

“I guess we can knock and ask if somebody is home?”, he suggested.

But right as they took another step towards the big door, their feet suddenly stopped moving, as if they had been cemented in. “What?”, the boy shouted. “My...my feet! They won’t move!”

He was able to leap back, however, it seemed that the heroes were forbidden from entering this huge mansion. It felt like a dark power had taken over and stopped the boy from moving.

“Looks like we won’t be able to enter that easily. I guess we can come back at another time”, he realized.

On their way back to the graveyard’s entrance, they noticed a seemingly confused Bakemon roaming around. The boy decided to try and talk to it. “Hello, are you okay? Can we help you somehow?” Bakemon looked at the boy with a surprised look on its face. “Bakkeeh?”, Bakemon asked the boy. It seemed that this Digimon doesn’t have the ability to speak like other Digimon they met before. The boy tried to guess what Bakemon might be saying to him by reading its facial expressions. The Bakemon seemed to have an expectant look on its face so the boy simply replied with a resounding “Yes!”

Bakemon seemed to be satisfied by his answer, so it responded with: “bakke bakkee?”.

The boy, still confused, responded with a “yes” again. This seemed to make Bakemon even happier,



so it got real close and shouted “Bakke bakke bakkeee?” at the boy who yelled “no”, however not to respond to Bakemon’s supposed question, but to signal that the Digimon got a little too close for comfort.

Either way, this seemed to have satisfied the ghostly Digimon and it suddenly wandered away.

“You’re going to File City, yes?”, the boy shouted towards Bakemon.

The Digimon didn’t flinch or react and simply continued moving.

“I guess we have to assume it knows the way to the city”, he hoped.

It looked like even odd encounters like this - in even stranger places - can lead to something good.

This had the heroes in a hopeful and eager mood as they made their way east to search for the infamous invisible bridge that Yuramon had mentioned.

They approached the north-eastern side of Tropical Jungle and it looked more and more like a canyon to them.

“It has to be somewhere around here”, said the boy to Agumon who took careful steps as they approached the edge of the cliff.

“Very careful now, Agumon”, the boy said with a determined look on his face.

The best chance they had at finding the invisible bridge - that is, if it even existed - was to slowly and carefully inspect the cliff.

The boy asked Agumon to secure him by holding his arms as he used his foot to test the waters - or in their case - the ground.

If he could feel the ground under his feet that would mean the rumors were true.

After a little hesitation, the boy decided to go for it and indeed he had some foothold - so he was sure of it. This had to be the rumored invisible bridge. So it was real!

“Careful now”, said the boy. “I’m really glad that I am not scared of heights”, he laughed.

“We have to continue like this now, Agumon, because I don’t know if the bridge might end unexpectedly. And I wouldn’t want us to fall off.”

They continued their safe strategy and it would eventually - slowly and steadily - bring them to the other side unharmed.

“We did it, Agumon!”, yelled the boy as he celebrated with his partner Digimon.

And so they reached Great Canyon.

The change in temperature was significant. “I guess some things are not that different from my world”, thought the boy.

They continued their path forward carefully and spotted a sign up front next to an opening in a rocky mountain wall. “Monochromon’s Shop”, it said.

“A shop? Here?”, the boy yelled, surprised.

He definitely wanted to find out who ran this shop and why it was here in the first place.

So the heroes didn’t hesitate to walk inside.

As they entered, they saw another Digimon leave the premise and the look on its face told an entire story. It didn’t look too pleased.

Or was this the normal expression of that Digimon named Weedmon? Either way, the heroes walked further in, only to stop in front of the counter.

“Monochromon,” the boy whispered.



The Digimon looked up, eyes narrowing as he spotted them. "You there! Would you like to work here?"

The boy nodded. "Uh...yeah. I'm..."

Before the boy could say anything, the Digimon already continued.

"I'm Monochromon", the Digimon interrupted, puffing his chest. "Shopkeeper extraordinaire! And you look like you are good at bargaining. The truth is, business is not so good these days but I desperately need a break from work. Can you take over? Part time? I will pay you proportionally to sales. Sounds good?"

The boy looked perplexed.

"Actually, I don't know a single thing about being a salesperson. I wanted to ask you to come to File City so we can work together and save the island." he offered Monochromon instead.

"File City, huh?", said Monochromon in a skeptical way. "And who's running my shop when I'm gone? Have you considered that?"

The boy shook his head, realizing it wasn't going to be easy to persuade this intelligent Digimon.

Monochromon waved a paw toward a small barrier. "You may enter there, your Digimon can come too and wait behind the counter."

The Digimon was all but convinced that the boy would not refuse his offer.

The boy responded: "wait, I haven't even said yes!"

"Please, I need your help and I am sure you will do a great job!", Monochromon said, pleadingly.

The boy - with an uncertain look on his face - turned to Agumon. "What should we do?", he asked.

Agumon - as often the case - already had a determined look on his face.

At that moment, the boy knew he couldn't back down from the challenge.

He thought: "it doesn't matter if it's a Digimon battle, a puzzle or a job like this. I have to prove that I am willing to do anything, to save this island."

And so he decided to give it a shot.

"Okay, Monochromon", said the boy. "I will try and help you!"

"Splendid!", the dinosaur-like Digimon said with joy in his eyes.

As they discussed potential sales strategies, their first customer already made their way towards the counter.

A green, gremlin-like Digimon with a bone club in its hands. It was a Goblimon.

The Digimon yelled at the boy: "hey boy, gimme some meat!". The boy was shocked by the Digimon's rude way of asking for the product but at the same time, he decided to just roll with it.

He knew this wouldn't be easy.

"Meat, you said? Uhm well, we have great meat!", the boy responded.

He remembered what Monochromon had advised him to do. So he started to bargain.

"How about a special price of only 75 Bits?", the boy offered Goblimon - knowing full well that this was a brazen attempt at raising the original price of this item that's usually being sold at 50 Bits.

Goblimon had a questioning look on its face but the boy couldn't tell if it was not pleased with the offer or if it was something else that bothered the green Digimon.

"75 Bits, huh?", said the Goblimon with a grumpy voice.

The tension was definitely in the air. Would the gamble pay off?

"Of course, sounds great, wrap it up for me, dude!", said the Goblimon, happily.





The boy looked at Agumon and Monochromon - mouth wide open - as Monochromon whispered to him. "Accept the money and hand over the meat, boy!"

"Oh, oh sorry, yes!", responded the boy - still surprised at the customer's reaction.

"Here you go, thank you for shopping with us today".

The Goblimon left and in walked a Digimon they had just seen a little while ago.

It was another Weedmon.

The boy remembered its grumpy facial expression. "Oh boy", he whispered to himself. "Here we go!"

Agumon tensed. "Grrr...", he did not like the vibe this Digimon in particular was giving off.

However, the boy decided to simply treat each Digimon equally and see what was going to happen. He was confident that his sales strategy might work with other customers as well, however he appeared to be slightly worried that the revenue might not be enough to satisfy Monochromon, if the customers kept asking for only meat.

In fact, the shop specialized in selling three items in particular. The aforementioned meat, the very useful item Portable Potty and lastly, the more expensive item medicine, which would drive sales significantly.

If only the boy could sell a few of the more valuable items, he would surely impress the shop owner.

As the Weedmon approached the counter, everyone in the room started to plug their noses.

What was that stench?

It appeared that this particular customer did not give off the most pleasant scent, to put it charitably.

Nonetheless, it was a potential buyer so the boy pulled himself together and greeted the smelly Digimon.

"Hello and welcome, how may I be of help?", he said in a polite voice.

"You talking to me, little wimp?", said the Weedmon snappishly. "Obviously, I want to buy something!"

The Weedmon didn't seem to be in the best of moods, but the boy didn't let that fact discourage him.

He tried his best to treat the client with respect.

Weedmon, unimpressed by the boy's efforts, went on by saying: "boy, I need some medicine".

The boy's eyes opened wide. He knew he was about to make some profit, so he was trying his best to read Weedmon's next move.

It was almost like a Digimon battle in its own right.

"M-medicine, you said?", the boy tentatively repeated. "We have some great medicine for sale! How about this 1000 Bit medicine for 1300 Bits?"

In the corner of his eye, he saw Monochromon flinch after hearing what he just said to the customer.

The Weedmon - without the bat of an eyelid - disgustingly responded "Never mind, I am shopping somewhere else" and left the shop immediately.

The boy, at this moment, realized what he had done wrong.

"Oh no, did I actually tell the Digimon the original price of the item?", as he looked at Monochromon who was simply shaking his head.

But there was no other way, the boy had to leave this blunder behind him and continue. And that's what he intended to do. There wasn't much time to think about the mistakes. He had to learn and adapt immediately and keep his head in the game.

Promptly, a new customer walked in. This Digimon had a penguin-like appearance, while being brightly red colored.



“Oh, a new customer, they sure look very nice”, the boy thought to himself but at the same time remembered to not be blinded by prejudice. He simply had to do his best, no matter the customer.

The Digimon’s name was Muchomon and it didn’t waste any time, asking for a Portable Potty immediately.

Upon hearing the Digimon’s request, the boy was already calculating the prices in his head. He knew that a Portable Potty usually cost around 300 Bits.

However, he also knew that if he raised the price too high that he might lose yet another customer. At the same time, lowering the price would result in low profit, so he had to make a swift and bold decision.

He decided it would be best to offer the item at 330 Bits, just slightly raising the original price. He responded to Muchomon: “we’re offering the best portable potties out there, for only 330 Bits per piece!”.

Muchomon looked visibly unimpressed and said: “330 Bits? That’s highway robbery, boy!”.

The boy had to react quickly so he responded: “too expensive? well, how about 300 Bits then?”, as sweat dripped from his face.

He knew he had to make a critical decision and couldn’t risk losing this customer.

“300 Bits?”, the Muchomon repeated. “Okay, wrap it up for me, dude!”.

“Th-Thank you very much!”, the boy said loudly.

He did it! Another successful sale - and from the looks of it, more customers were already lining up outside.

He gave it his all, and used the failures to his advantage by learning from the mistakes he made.

“The shift is half-way over, already”, Monochromon suddenly said.

The boy hadn’t realized that time flew by so fast. He was locked in and focused on doing his best at being a salesperson.

By that time, he had already noticed a pattern regarding the customers, or rather the type of Digimon these customers were.

He did manage to sell a 1000 Bit medicine to a Goblimon for 1500 Bits, a 50% increase in the price, however that Digimon did not seem to care.

On top of that, he noticed that Weedmon were very stingy and mostly grumpy customers, so with those he had to be very careful.

Gotsumon, another one of his clients, loved to bargain and think about the price the boy offered the products for, however in the end, these rocky Digimon would still buy the item at a higher rate.

And lastly, for the penguin-like Digimon Muchomon, the boy wasn’t able to recognize any sort of behavioral pattern. He guessed it really depended on the Digimon’s mood if it would accept raised prices or not.

Slowly but surely, the boy got the hang of it and just as he had wrapped up yet another successful sale, Monochromon stopped him right there to tell him: “the shift is over! We need your courage and ability to make timely decisions!”

The boy was visibly confused. “What are you saying?”, he asked.

“I was testing you, to see if you are truly able to save this island”, Monochromon explained. “Strength alone is not enough, you also need wisdom and bravery. I’m sorry I deceived you!”

The boy responded. “So, did we pass?”

“Absolutely!”, Monochromon said. “I will aid you in your quest and move to the city.”

“But what’s going to become of your shop here?”, the boy asked, worrying about the dinosaur-Digimon’s legacy.



"It has served its purpose and is no longer needed. I'm going to open a new shop in File City", Monochromon explained.

"That's wonderful!", the boy cheered while looking back at Agumon who had a proud and smug look on his face. "I guess I'll see you in the city soon, then!"

And so, the heroes managed to recruit yet another Digimon for File City. Jijimon would surely be proud.

Quite some time had passed - of course, the boy worked a full shift on that day and the sun was already setting.

Agumon looked visibly exhausted, so they tried to look for a good spot to rest. The temperature was quite low, they were in a canyon after all. And the boy could hear some Digimon's cries in the distance. He wasn't sure if there was a safe spot to rest nearby, so he decided to use one of his recently acquired Autopilots to transport them back to File City in an instant.

They went on to use the item and rested at Jijimon's house. The elder happily provided shelter for them, as he was proud of their recent accomplishments.

For the boy, this adventure was starting to feel real: restoring File City wouldn't just be about battles. It would be about earning trust, understanding each Digimon, and proving himself as a partner worthy of leading. That was the lesson he learned on that day.

Agumon nudged him, head tilted, letting out a big yawn. "Raaaargh!"

The boy smiled. "All right, buddy. You earned yourself a full night of sleep. Good night!"

### *The next day*

The morning sun streamed across the streets of File City, warming cracked stone paths and the occasional patch of stubborn grass that had refused to die.

The boy yawned and stretched, feeling the stiffness from yesterday's trial. Agumon bounced at his side, tail flicking, ready for anything.

"Ready to start the day?", the boy asked.

Agumon growled playfully. "Raaaargh!"

The first task was simple: training. Jijimon had left instructions the day before, scribbled on a piece of old parchment.

Train your partner, build their strength, and explore. Every Digimon you help might return to File City.

They began near the edge of the city, where they had trained before. Green Gym.

"Okay, Agumon", he said, pointing at a tree trunk. "Focus on your accuracy. Hit the target with all your might."

Agumon crouched low, muscles tensing, then leapt forward. Teeth snapped at the wood. The tail swung, shaking the training device. The boy counted each success, cheering him on.

"Good! That's three perfect hits in a row!"

Agumon barked, spinning in a small circle. Every movement was sharper, more confident than the one before. The boy felt a swell of pride.

As they trained, a faint rustle came from the tall grass nearby. The boy froze. "Did you hear that?" Agumon's ears twitched. He growled softly, stepping protectively in front of the boy.

From the grass emerged a small, baby Digimon with a headful of long, gray hair - Yuramon, from the city.



The boy knelt slowly. "Hey there...What happened? What are you doing here?"

Yuramon twitched, eyes darting to Agumon, then back to the boy. A small voice squeaked: "I wanted to tell you two something before you leave the city again."

Agumon relaxed, sitting down with a friendly bark. The boy extended his hand. "Tell us something? What could it be that you would like to tell us?"

Yuramon tilted its head. After a moment's hesitation, it nodded and shuffled forward. "B-bandits! Have you heard of the bandits roaming around Great Canyon?"

"Bandits? No, never heard of them! Are they bad guys?", he asked Yuramon.

Yuramon shuddered, then responded. "Well, they rob you when they see you. That's scary!"

The boy felt the discomfort in Yuramon's shaky voice, so he proclaimed with confidence: "I have to do something about that!", as he looked at Agumon who was raring to go.

Their next destination was decided.

The heroes made their way back to Great Canyon in pursuit of the aforementioned bandits.

The boy looked at Agumon and signaled caution.

"Stay alert," he whispered. "According to Yuramon, the bandits should be around here."

It didn't take long for their destined encounter. A small group of wild looking Agumon appeared.

"Woohoo", one of them yelled.

The boy's Agumon stepped forward, growling menacingly, "Raaaargh..."

The wild Agumon didn't hesitate to growl back. "Boss?", one of them called out. "New victims!"

Agumon sniffed the air, then blinked at the boy.

He sensed danger - a strong Digimon was approaching them.

In this instant, he realized what Yuramon had meant: these bandits are dangerous because they attack as a pack instead of individually.

From behind a nearby rock, a large, green Digimon lunged, mouth wide open, its sharp teeth hanging in all possible directions. Bone club in one hand and a solid rock in the other.

The boy sensed the danger immediately and yelled: "Agumon, watch out and dodge!", as the hostile Digimon threw that boulder at the boy's Agumon.

Agumon nimbly leapt aside, snapping his jaws and sending a spit fire attack back at the enemy.

The boy was looking for escape routes as they were clearly outnumbered, but it was already too late.

The pack of Agumon encircled them instantly and also moving forward was the mean, green Digimon.

The boy's stomach tightened. He had heard whispers of OGREMON - a rogue Digimon who enjoyed taking what wasn't his.

He growled: "hey you, give up and hand over all your belongings and we'll let you pass unharmed."

The boy did not flinch, despite the dire situation they were finding themselves in.

Instead he responded with a resounding: "no, you give up! We are here to stop you."

Suddenly, silence. Did the boy's bravery catch the bandits by surprise?

Unfortunately not.

The silence was followed by excessive laughter. It was OGREMON that laughed. Loudly, almost as if he was mocking the boy and his Digimon.

"You just made a big mistake", OGREMON barked at them as he ordered his henchmen Agumon to attack the duo.



The battle was rough and tense because Agumon had to make sure to dodge all the strong attacks from Ogremon while dealing with the smaller Agumon at the same time. Eventually, this proved to be too much for the small Rookie-level Digimon to handle. As he was trying to dispose of the hostile Agumon, the other Agumon flanked the hero's Digimon and shot a spit fire attack into his back. Shortly after this distraction, a big ranged attack came flying towards Agumon. It was Ogremon's powerful Magma Bomb. Agumon took a full hit, looked weakened and began to tumble.

"Oh no, Agumon!", the boy shouted in shock as he was looking for healing items in his bag. But it was already too late. Ogremon struck Agumon's head with his solid bone club at full force.

Agumon went down, knocked out - not moving an inch...

The boy was in shock, he didn't know what to do. Out of desperation he simply threw himself over his beaten Digimon to avoid any further damage, had the enemies attacked them further. However, this was not the case. The bandits were after their belongings. They ripped the boy's backpack off of him and began searching for anything they might find useful.

However, the boy didn't care about items or things at that moment. All he wanted was to bring Agumon to safety. His precious partner who he fought with side by side had just collapsed. Tears started to roll down his face as he somehow mustered the energy to lift his Digimon and carry him on his shoulders. It must have been the power of adrenaline at that point - by no means was Agumon a lightweight but this fact did not seem to matter at all.

All the boy wanted was to treat his precious partner Digimon, so he slowly but surely made his way back to File City - bags empty, but at least they were safe.

"Jijimon!", he yelled. "Jijimon, please, I need help! Agumon collapsed!". The elder Digimon reacted fast and ordered his coresidents to summon Centarumon to Jijimon's house immediately.

A few moments later, Centarumon arrived and checked on Agumon. "Oh no, poor thing, what happened to you?", the doctor asked the boy.

The boy responded, tears still flowing. "We wanted to put an end to the bandit's evildoings so we challenged them head-on. However, the number's game was not in our favor and so we were overwhelmed and Agumon took a bad hit from Ogremon. But please tell me, Centarumon, can you help Agumon? Will he be alright?".

Centarumon looked back at the boy and gave a hand sign of relief. "No need to worry, Agumon is merely knocked out. It doesn't look like he sustained any long-term damage. A good night's rest and a proper meal should have him up and running again in no time."

The boy let out a huge sigh of relief as he sank down on his knees. "I'm so glad", he said - still crying, however the tears had turned into happy tears.

"Let's leave Agumon here for a bit and check back later", Centarumon suggested, however the boy did not want to leave his partner's side, so he insisted on staying with Agumon. Centarumon understood and nodded at the boy.



Several hours passed, not once taking his eyes off of his partner Digimon, the boy whispered: "I'm so sorry Agumon, this was all my fault, I was reckless again and you suffered as a result."

At that moment, Agumon's body stirred. He slowly opened his eyes.

"Agumon, you're awake! Oh I am so glad you're okay!", said the boy with relief in his voice as he gave his partner Digimon a big hug, not too tight as Agumon still wasn't at a hundred percent.

Agumon felt the warmth and concern from his tamer, at the same time sensing the regret the boy carried within. The Digimon tried his best to comfort the boy, trying to tell him that he shouldn't blame himself with a friendly gesture.

The boy tried his best to not fall into a cycle of depression. He couldn't possibly give up now.

Yes, it was a major loss they suffered, but Agumon and he got away, mostly unscathed. They would never make this mistake again and be fully prepared for anything from then on. The boy and Agumon made that promise, without any words, simply by looking at one another. It was clear to both. They wouldn't give up.

As their morale received this big boost, the boy could hear a rumbling sound ring throughout Jijimon's premises.

In fact, it came from Agumon's tummy.

"Oh, you must be hungry, my friend", the boy giggled. It was time for dinner and one thing was clear as day: Agumon's appetite seemed to have grown even larger.

And so the day ended - the heroes have survived. They lost the battle, but the war was far from over. They would eventually get their revenge and be fully prepared before tracking down the bandits again.

Agumon slept through the night without waking up once - the boy sat by his partner's side, awake. He still struggled to grasp that he did not have to eat or sleep in this world. "I'm going to rest my eyes at least for a bit", he thought to himself as he moved closer to Agumon, happy that his Digimon partner was doing alright.

The night flew by. The streets of File City were quiet the next morning, but the boy had learned a valuable lesson. Preparation is key. And so he woke up Agumon by holding a big piece of juicy meat close to his mouth. Agumon chomped away at the food, eyes not even open yet.

"Are you ready to train, buddy?", the boy asked excitedly.

Agumon still looked sleepy but didn't want to disappoint his tamer, so the Digimon got up and responded with a resounding "Rarrgh!"

The duo made their way towards the green gym once more and this time around, they went for a more balanced training session. "I want to make sure that Agumon improves all of his talents, so he is fully prepared for any and all comers."

Several hours passed while Agumon did his absolute best to impress the boy. And as the sun was setting again, the boy looked at Agumon and proudly said: "you really look stronger now, great job, Agumon!"

The reptile-Digimon was so happy to be praised by his tamer that he jumped around in circles. In doing so, the Digimon's body started to emit a strange light.

"Agumon?", the boy yelled, not knowing what was happening to his partner. "Are you okay? What is that light?"

Agumon stopped and looked back at the boy. Suddenly, the Digimon let out a shrill scream as if he was in pain. At the same time, his skin started to fall off, first slowly, and then faster and faster.

"Agumon? No, what's going on with you? Did we overdo it again?", the boy shouted in desperation.





But no response from his partner - who at this point had shedded his entire outer skin.

A brief moment of silence.

And then, the light came back, brighter than before. It was so blinding, the boy had to cover his eyes. And when he had a chance to look back at his partner Digimon, he noticed that something had changed. The Digimon seemed to be okay. In fact, even better than ever.

"Agumon? Is that you?", the boy, visibly confused, asked.

"Roarr", the Digimon growled with a deep voice. Much deeper than Agumon's.

At that moment, the boy recalled a certain quality that Digimon possessed. It was a very special ability. Digivolution!

He remembered that the Digimon he raised on his Virtual Pet game also underwent Digivolution at some point. This must have been it, he thought.

Slowly but surely, the boy regained clear vision of what was standing in front of him.

At this point, he was absolutely sure, this must have been a case of Digivolution.

His partner Digimon digivolved in front of his very eyes.

A large, dinosaur-like creature was now standing there. Orange skin, blue stripes, wearing a brown horned mask. White sharp fangs and claws. There was no doubt. The boy's Agumon had digivolved to his next stage, the Champion-level. And the Digimon standing there was called Greymon.

"Greymon, you are Greymon! Wow, Agumon, you digivolved!", the boy said with pride in his voice.

"Now we can get our revenge on Ogremon and those stupid bandits!", he thought to himself.

With a more powerful Digimon like this by his side, he was certain that they could take on much stronger opponents from now on - including the bandits they still had a score to settle with.

The duo quickly returned to File City, proudly standing before Jijimon. "Look Jiji, Agumon digivolved into Greymon. It's all thanks to his hard work and dedication!", the boy proudly informed the elder.

"That's wonderful, but this also happened because of your love for the Digimon", Jijimon reassured the boy.

His eyes sparkled. It was time to head out and take on the world!

However, before seeking revenge on the bandits, the boy remembered that the Drimogemon who were digging in the drill tunnel had told him to come back after a little while to check on the progress...

So their next destination was a stopover at Drill Tunnel.

The boy wondered if Drimogemon had made any progress with digging the tunnel. "Only one way to find out", he whispered.

At this point, the heroic duo was quite familiar with the city's surroundings so they found their way back to Drill Tunnel rather swiftly.

Upon arriving there, they immediately made their way to the Drimogemon that had been digging at the spot where the hot temperatures emerged.

And indeed, the tunnel was open now! "Yippee, Drimogemon has done it!", yelled the boy.

They continued walking through the open path until their digging friend appeared in the distance.

It seemed that something was troubling that Drimogemon. They approached the concerned looking Digimon and asked: "everything okay, Drimogemon? Why the sad face?"

Drimogemon looked at the boy, saying: "I came this far but now I have hit a dead end. You see this boulder? My drill can't get through, oh tragedy!"

The boy, concerned about the situation, took a step towards that boulder. "Let me take a closer look. I'm sure we can find a solution to this."



Upon further inspection, he came up with an idea. He was able to take a peek through some wall cracks and noticed that the path behind the boulder went downhill.

"I have an idea", the boy tried to spark the Drimogemon.

"Greymon, I need your help!" he said, as Greymon looked back at him confused. The two Champion-level Digimon both had questioning looks on their faces. But they had come this far, so they were willing to hear the boy out.

"If we can't break the boulder, then why don't we try to move it?", he suggested.

"Move it? Are you crazy? This boulder is huge!", Drimogemon responded doubtfully.

The boy countered: "we won't know until we try, right?" as he looked back at Greymon who was already flexing his arms and legs.

"Let's show this boulder, who's boss!", the boy yelled.

Greymon walked towards the big rock and leaned towards it in a lateral position. He wanted to test the waters by gently giving it a push. The hero's Digimon then noticed that it might indeed be possible to move that boulder due to its round shape.

Then, Greymon took a step back and immediately rushed forward to tackle the boulder with his shoulder.

"It moved a little!", the boy noticed. "Come on, just a bit more!"

Greymon started using his arms and slowly but surely the rock would move further down the path. Eventually, it started rolling on its own and before anyone knew, the boulder had already been pushed downhill.

"We did it! Great job, Greymon!", the boy celebrated.

Greymon with a smug look on his face was surprised at his own, newly found strength. A power he had yet to get used to and learn how to use, however this was the first step towards mastering this great ability.

Drimogemon looked on in disbelief, mouth wide open. "W-wow, you guys actually cleared the path! Amazing! It looks like the tunnel is empty from here on out."

As everyone was celebrating, a sudden heatwave rapidly came through from the area ahead.

"Oh no", Drimogemon shuddered. "It looks like there is a river of lava up ahead. That's dangerous!"

The boy noticed it too but immediately responded: "I know this is dangerous but we can't just stop here and go home. We have to investigate what is causing this extreme heat and put an end to it. Or do you want this volcano to erupt and destroy all of File Island?"

Drimogemon shook its head with a concerned look on its face. "G-Good luck", it murmured.

"Come on Greymon, we can do this! The heat doesn't bother you, does it?", said the boy.

Greymon, who indeed feels comfortable in hot places, already took a step ahead.

"Okay then, here we go!"

The duo slowly approached the river of lava. That's when the boy spotted a narrow path that led to some sort of cave.

"Look Greymon, we can follow this path. But be careful, don't fall!", the boy warned his partner Digimon.

The heroes carefully walked towards the cave in the back while watching their every step. One wrong move and they would fall into that river of lava and then it would have been game over for them.

Luckily, they reached the end of the road quickly and managed to peek inside that cave.

In there, a bipedal creature was standing there, back facing the heroic duo. Its body was engulfed in flames and upon approaching it, the boy heard the creature say something.

"This is a dire situation. The tribes run wild and forget their language, I don't know for how much longer I can still think straight. We have to do something."



Its voice got louder and louder and as it was speaking to itself, it started lifting both arms upwards, riling itself up. The boy noticed some energy emitting from the flaming Digimon's body as it fired off a shockwave-like attack that triggered an earthquake.

The boy was alarmed immediately and tried to get closer to this Digimon that still hadn't noticed him yet.

It proved to be a tough task to even get close to the flaming creature due to how hot it has gotten in that cave. But the boy knew that he had to stop it or else the island would be destroyed.

When he finally managed to close in on the Digimon he recognized the species. "You are Meramon! Oh no, this is bad," the boy said. "Hey, stop it, please stop this madness! Do you want to destroy the entire island?", he yelled at Meramon.

Meramon noticed its visitors and instantly responded. "Who are you and why are you here? There is no other way than destruction. It is already too late. Come and see if you can stop me!", Meramon provoked the boy.

They had no other choice but to challenge the Digimon to a battle, hoping they could beat some sense into it.

And so, Greymon already got into an offensive position, firing off some spit fire attacks. Unfortunately, these attacks proved to be ineffective against a flaming opponent like that.

Furthermore, it seemed that fire attacks even fueled Meramon's strength further.

Next, the aggressive monster started to generate a bomb-like sphere. "I'll blow you away! Magma Bomb", Meramon yelled upon throwing a massive attack at Greymon.

The hero's Digimon barely managed to dodge this devastating attack and decided to strike back with his claws. Indeed, this seemed to work as the Meramon looked like it took some damage from the physical attacks.

Threatened by Greymon, Meramon decided to switch it up as well so it started to use kicks to try and damage the hero's Digimon.

However, in close combat, Greymon clearly had the upper hand so after a few strikes, Meramon's knees buckled and it fell down.

"Do it Greymon, finish it off!", the boy yelled as if he was in a frenzy.

One final slash to the body of Meramon and it completely went down - unconscious on the floor.

"We did it", the boy celebrated and so did Greymon. The battle was tough but this new found power has proven to be quite the asset.

All of a sudden, the boy noticed a glowing light emitting from his partner's body. It seems that Greymon had just gained another new power.

Indeed he had acquired the skill Magma Bomb from his opponent just now. A new powerful attack in their arsenal!

Slowly but surely, Meramon came to and looked at the team that had just beaten it.

"Wow, you are quite the duo", it said to them as if it had recognized their strength. "So, you really think there is another way?", it asked.

The boy responded: "of course there is! Just think about it, if you destroyed the island, wouldn't that defeat the purpose of saving it?"

"Oh my", Meramon said. "You are right, I haven't even thought of that. I was so desperate and enraged that I couldn't think clearly. But now it all makes sense. So please tell me, how can I help you?"

A happy smile started to form on the boy's face. "If you believe in us, please join the city and help everyone!"

"The city, huh? I didn't think it would be possible to rebuild it", Meramon admitted.



"We are already in the midst of doing so. Don't you know? Nothing is impossible!"

With this, Meramon lost the doubtful look on its face and responded with a resounding: "yes, you are right! I am going to help you. Thanks for encouraging me! A new life in the city, oh I can't wait!" It stood up and didn't waste a second, immediately starting to run towards File City.

The boy turned around and looked on when he realized that all the lava had frozen. "When did that happen?", he wondered.

As the rage inside Meramon died down, so did the fire inside the tunnels.

"This is great, now we can investigate the lava cave even further!", the boy blared out.

And so, they made their way towards the inner lava caves where they spotted smaller Digimon floating around. Demimeramon who reside in warm places such as this cave.

They looked friendly and harmless and most importantly, quite curious. Of course, they had never seen a human before as they looked so young.

"What kind of Digimon are you? What's your special move? Why do you look like that?", the in-training Digimon asked away at the boy who looked quite overwhelmed.

The boy introduced himself and Greymon and explained why they were here.

"Oh, okay, have fun exploring this place!", the Demimeramon responded without a single concern in their minds.

Surprised at their blind trust, the boy wandered further into the cave and spoke to a few other Demimeramon. One of them asked: "are you still hot? Some Digimon can get sick from too much heat", while another one said: "Do you collect Digimon cards? Everyone loves them, so I'm collecting them too. I would love to have a Meramon card, so if you bring me one, I'll buy it from you for 1500 Bits."

Up to this point, the boy had never heard of Digimon cards before - at least not in the Digital World. "So here they have Digimon cards, too? Wow this world never ceases to amaze me", he thought to himself.

They continued their exploration and found a few useful items laying around. Some of them looked like data chips - similar to those that a few Digimon had dropped after a fight - and one of the Demimeramon explained to them that these would boost the strength and abilities of a Digimon permanently.

So the boy decided to feed them to his Greymon. However, the reptile Digimon seemed to not like this type of item. Understandable, why would anyone want to swallow a chip - and we're not talking about potato chips here.

The boy felt compelled to scold his Digimon and so Greymon consented to swallowing the items afterwards. His tamer surely wouldn't mean any harm.

Upon consuming the chips, Greymon felt his abilities grow stronger immediately as he smashed a random rock on the floor with ease. "Now that's what I like to see", the boy celebrated!

Some time had passed and the duo discovered a new path in the western part of the lava cave. "Oh, look who it is", the boy shouted. In the distance, they saw the Drimogemon from before, happily digging again. It noticed the heroes and said: "hey, soon this tunnel will be open".

The boy laughed and looked at Greymon. "I guess, all is right in the Digimon World again".

They would have to come back later and check on the digging progress, but for now, they were done in the lava cave and Drill Tunnel.

Of course, the boy hasn't forgotten about his goal, to take revenge on Ogremon and his crew, so the duo was headed east, across the river, into Tropical Jungle.

There, the boy remembered that they had yet to explore the area they briefly spotted north of



Centarumon's Amida Forest.

"Greymon, I know you want your revenge on OGREMON, too, and so do I - but I have to make sure you are strong enough to challenge these scoundrels. How about a little detour to test your skills?", the boy asked his buddy.

Of course, Greymon agreed and so the duo made their way towards the unexplored area known as the Ancient Dino Region.

The duo remembered the first time they stepped foot into this region - even if only briefly - but something felt off about it. Everything felt so slow and laid back but the boy couldn't make out what exactly was the reason for that.

Upon entering the Ancient Dino Region, they suddenly heard a loud roar from the distance.

Big steps, almost mammoth-like, got closer.

The gravel on the ground started shaking and the leaves in the big, tropical trees were rattling.

"Something is coming", the boy said to Greymon with a determined, but cautious expression.

"Who are you?", a deep, rowdy voice yelled.

In front of the heroes, a large dinosaur-like Digimon appeared. Crimson red skin and sharp, white teeth, long claws and green plates on its back.

"I do not want to repeat myself again, so tell me, who are you?", the Digimon asked again.

The boy stood there, in shock. He couldn't believe that there are Digimon in this world that resemble a tyrannosaurus rex.

But here it was and unfortunately for the heroic duo, the Digimon did not seem to be in a particularly good mood.

"W-we want to save this island by recruiting Digimon to the city, so we need to search every nook and cranny", the boy explained, nervously waving his hands and arms around.

"Grrr, I don't trust you", said the dinosaur Digimon.

You could cut the tension with a knife - the boy and Greymon realized, they would not be able to progress without a fight. So they mustered up all their courage and decided to face off against this behemoth of a Digimon.

"I am Tyrannomon, of the Ancient Dino Region. You shall not enter these sacred grounds so this is your last warning, get lost now or face my wrath!", the Digimon yelled.

The boy responded: "I am sorry but running away is not an option. We will fight and prove to you that we don't have any evil intentions!"

He then whispered to Greymon: "remember our training, you have enough strength and wisdom to overcome this challenge. You are just as big as this Digimon, so let's stick to our usual strategy.

Observe, dodge, counterattack! Got it?"

Greymon nodded at the boy, fletching his teeth. He was eager to test his new found strength. There was no way he was going to lose again.

"Watch out!", the boy yelled, as large rocks were fired towards Greymon. That's a move the team has not seen yet, so they had to be careful with their next steps.

All of a sudden, Tyrannomon stopped moving, seemingly stopping the attacks.

"Huh?", the boy reacted, visibly confused. "Why is it not attacking?"

At a closer glance however, the boy realized that the hostile Digimon took a different stance.

It seemed like it was in a state of instant meditation, almost like it was focussing the body and mind to power itself up.

"Be careful Greymon, just because it's not attacking right now, doesn't mean that this is not dangerous", the boy warned his partner.

He realized that this stance was likely a self-buffing technique to strengthen the impact of any follow-up attacks.



"Tyrannomon will likely focus on an all-out attack so watch it closely, dodge and then fire off a counter technique, understood?"

Greymon's eyes looked determined - he was going to do just as his tamer said.

"There!", the boy yelled as Tyrannomon was changing its stance. "Be careful, we haven't seen this move before either! It looks like it's going to dive at you head-first with full force!", the hero warned his Digimon.

Greymon observed the enemy's movements carefully and managed to block this powerful move named Buster Dive. The impact however, was so strong, it resulted in an explosion that blasted both Digimon away.

Thankfully, Greymon was not hurt and could continue.

"Good job, Greymon, now try to release a Magma Bomb as soon as Tyrannomon goes for this type of move again! I noticed that it takes quite some time to prepare, so we have to take advantage of that opening."

Greymon did just as his tamer said and it worked! Tyrannomon took big hit after big hit.

Even the continued power-up strategy of the big, red Digimon did not seem to pay off and after a few more attacks, Greymon was ready to discharge a powerful Mega Flame to finish this fight.

Tyrannomon collapsed in front of the heroes and the joy on the boy's face was quite noticeable.

"We did it, we did it!", he celebrated with Greymon. "That was amazing, the hard training was worth it and you did a great job, my partner!"

Greymon tried to hide his excitement but couldn't quite contain it, so they both had a little victory dance.

"W-who are you guys?", a weakened Tyrannomon suddenly asked.

The duo's faces turned serious almost immediately.

"It's as I said, we are trying to save the island by gathering friends in File City, I wasn't lying earlier", the boy responded. "Will you come with us and help?"

"Okay, I believe you, sorry for the sudden attack but it's my job to protect this forest. Also, I am sorry but I cannot come with you, my new job is so much fun and I wouldn't trade it for the world!", Tyrannomon said.

"New job?", the boy asked.

"Yes, I am protecting the border between the Glacial Time Zone and the Speedy Time Zone. Both are part of the Ancient Dino Region, but as you might have noticed, time moves much slower here in the Glacial Time Zone".

The boy let out a big "Aaahhh!"

"So that's why I felt like everything feels much slower here. Wow I would have never thought that such a place exists".

"And as you can guess, the Speedy Time Zone is quite the dangerous zone as time moves much faster over there. That's why I have to protect the border so no unauthorized Digimon enter that deep forest and endanger themselves", Tyrannomon explained.

"But that's bad for us", said the boy. "We really have to explore this forest to find answers. Because not only are we trying to recruit Digimon for the city, we are also trying to learn about the danger that has overcome this island. We need to find the source of evil and therefore we would like to search even in the dangerous parts of the island", the boy responded with a determined look on his face followed by a big nod from Greymon.

"But I can't just let you waltz into the Speedy Time Zone like it's nothing. You and your Digimon are going to age twice as fast, do you know how dangerous that is? I don't even have the courage to go there."

"But we defeated you, didn't we?", the boy countered.

"Grrrr, yes...yes, that you did", Tyrannomon admitted.





"Okay, I will let you pass. Meet me deeper in the forest at the border. And take enough food with you, got it?", Tyrannomon explained.

The boy nodded with a big smile on his face as the duo made their way through the Ancient Dino Region.

They were in awe of the vegetation and large swamps as well as ancient looking Digimon.

Some were hostile and tried to attack them, such as Yanmamon and Vermillimon, but other Digimon seemed to be peaceful and even willing to help.

Brachiomon, Monochromon and Saberdrakon had some useful information to share with the heroic duo such as giving them an overview of File Island.

On their way to Tyrannomon's post, the boy spotted a vending machine near the road. It looked quite rundown and was overgrown with plants, but it seemed to work.

"A vending machine, huh? I guess nothing here surprises me anymore", the boy laughed as he approached the machine. The display read: "Cost: 200 Bits, what will you get?"

The contents seemed to be random so the boy decided to give it a try. He earned some Bits from the recent fights anyway, so why not see what this vending machine had to offer?

He inserted the 200 Bits, pulled the lever and with a clicking sound, out came an item.

The display read: "Steak, here you go!"

"A steak? Wow, that's great, something new to eat for Greymon!", the boy said, seemingly excited.

But what he was about to discover was more like the opposite of exciting.

A sickly sweet, moldy stench emerged from the dispenser.

"Oh no, I think I have to...", the boy sobbed as he held his breath.

Greymon looked at the vending machine - disgusted but also sort of intrigued. The curiosity was written on his face, maybe because he has never had the taste of a special meat like this.

"Greymon, are you sure about this?", the boy asked his partner.

Greymon nodded slowly.

"O-okay, I guess we can wrap it up tightly and take it with us, it might come in handy at some point", said the boy, disgusted at the purple, moldy looking piece of meat - if one could even call it that.

As the duo travelled deeper into the forest, they noticed a mountain range in the distance that looked bare and colorless. Moving closer, they spotted dusty bones in a decayed, lifeless area.

This must have been the Speedy Time Zone, where time really goes by faster, thus leading to all the decay. However, even this intimidating scenery was not enough to scare off the heroic duo and so they approached Tyrannomon which was on guard duty near the border.

"Hey, friends", the red dino Digimon yelled as it spotted Greymon and the boy. "So, this is it, the entrance to the Speedy Time Zone. Do you still want to move forward?"

"Absolutely!", the boy answered, all determined. "We can't just turn around and act like this does not concern us. We have to gather information so we can understand more about this world's crisis, so will you help us, please?"

Tyrannomon then responded with a resounding: "I guess I have to. You beat me fair and square after all. But please be careful and come back as soon as possible."

"Of course, we will do our best and come back unharmed, I promise!", said the boy as he and Greymon walked towards the border.

"See you soon!", he shouted back at Tyrannomon who was left behind with a look of concern on its face.

So here it was - the Speedy Time Zone. "Wow, this really is a completely different time zone", said the boy, astonished by the landscape that he and Greymon found themselves in now.

"Let's not waste any time and carry out our mission, okay Greymon?"

Greymon let out a big "rawr", all eager and excited to explore this new domain.

The brave team had to dodge a few hostile Gotsumon and Saberdrakon that seemed to live in this



area.

The boy was thinking to himself why any Digimon would choose to live in a deadly place like this but he guessed that they would have their reasons.

And so they continued their way deeper into the forest, moving past a giant dinosaur-like skeleton.

These bony remains formed some sort of tunnel that they could traverse.

However, at the end of that tunnel, they found nothing - absolutely nothing.

A lone Saberdrakon was flapping on the spot in a corner, looking at the duo menacingly.

"I know what you are", the dark bird Digimon whispered as it attacked Greymon.

"Oh no, we really don't have time for this", the boy shouted in distress.

"But I guess we have no choice, come on Greymon, finish this one off fast, please!"

Greymon seemed to have no issue fighting off the hostile Digimon, even learning a new technique in the process!

And thus, the boy learned that Greymon was not only capable of performing close combat and fire type moves.

He was also capable of channeling the power of wind and electricity and so he learned the powerful and versatile move Spinning Shot.

"That's amazing, Greymon! So this battle wasn't a complete waste of time after all", the boy shouted in excitement. "Now let's turn around and find a different path."

"Wait!", the defeated Saberdrakon said out of nowhere. "Wait, I can help you. Turn left at the end of the bony tunnel, hehehe."

"Left? But, we looked everywhere and I didn't see any passageway. Are you lying to us?", the boy suspected.

"You will see, hehehe", said the Saberdrakon.

The boy did not fully trust that Digimon yet, but they had no other choice. They had to follow any lead in order to make progress.

So the duo went ahead to search for the supposed hidden passage and indeed, they found a way through the rocks that they had not spotted before.

They ended up in an entirely new area.

"Wow, that worked! We really haven't been here yet! Now let's find some clues and then we are out of here", the boy told his partner, Greymon.

However, just as they were about to dodge a pack of Saberdrakon, Greymon's facial expression turned from eager to uncomfortable. Something was clearly bothering the Digimon.

"Greymon?, are you okay?", the boy asked with concern.

"Oh...Oh no, do you have to go...?", he realized.

They haven't found a single toilet recently and the boy had no Portable Potties on him.

"Damn, I should have snatched one from Monochromon's shop back then", he regretted.

But this was their new situation now.

"Please try to hold it in Greymon, I know this might be impossible due to the time progressing faster but please give it your all!", the boy kindly asked.

As they entered a new area, the boy spotted a mysterious looking rock on the ground.

"Wait, this is not an ordinary rock, this looks like a meteorite! Hmm, should we crack it open and see?", the boy asked his partner.

Greymon, still in discomfort, tried to be helpful and nodded.

"Okay, here goes nothing!"

The boy rattled and shook the meteorite but nothing happened.

"Hmm, looks like a normal meteorite to me", he said.

"Well, I do look normal, so what?", a voice suddenly responded.



The boy took a leap backwards.

"What, what was that? Did that meteorite just talk?", he wondered.

Suddenly, the meteorite started moving and turned around.

It wasn't a meteorite after all, it was a Digimon!

"I'm Meteormon, from outer space", the Digimon introduced itself.

"Hey, uhm, do you happen to know anything about the danger of the island?", the boy instantly asked.

He skipped the formalities as he had Greymon's growing discomfort on his mind.

"I know nothing, I was just born!", the confused looking Digimon responded, seemingly distressed.

"Are you really telling the truth?", the boy countered.

"How rude! Okay let's fight and see who's right or wrong!", Meteormon answered.

"Oh no, I didn't want this to escalate but I do need answers so we can get out of here as soon as possible. Greymon, I know you are struggling right now, but can you defeat this Digimon so we can move on?"

Of course Greymon wouldn't deny this request so despite the uncomfortable situation he was in, he decided to focus on the task at hand.

And thus the battle began.

Meteormon engaged Greymon with a devastating move right out of the box.

The immense heat generated from this attack was even enough to inflict damage on the fire expert Greymon. But it wasn't enough to take him down.

The battle then briefly turned into a Magma Bomb back and forth with Greymon coming out on top.

The duo was on a roll lately, so they wouldn't go down that easily.

Meteormon was dealt with quickly and the defeated Digimon was impressed by the teamwork it had just witnessed.

"Mhh, you guys are good! Sorry, I was so rude earlier without explaining. I'm from the meteorite tribe, we are born in space and fall towards the surface where we then sleep for a very long time. Actually I should have been sleeping for much longer", Meteormon explained.

"Time moves faster in this forest", the boy explained.

"Oh, that makes sense. Well, sorry I couldn't be of any help, but I'm curious to check out this island you mentioned. See you around", said the Digimon and started rolling off.

"Okay, we didn't find any clues, so let's get out of here right now, okay Greymon?"

The boy didn't hear any confirmation from his partner so he looked back at the dinosaur Digimon who had an ashamed look on his face as if he was trying to hide something.

"Greymon? D-did you...Oh no...", said the boy while spotting a brown, steaming something behind Greymon.

The poor Digimon was trying to hide this faux-pas but his *product* simply stood out due to the barren land around it.

"I'm sorry I couldn't find you a toilet in time, Greymon, will you forgive me?", the boy asked remorsefully.

Of course Greymon couldn't be mad at his loving tamer, so despite the embarrassment, the duo decided to leave the turd behind as a memento, or maybe a guidepost in case they got lost again? Either way, what's done was done.

What mattered then was to exit the Speedy Time Zone fast and report back to Tyrannomon.

Back at the border, Tyrannomon was already eagerly awaiting the duo's return.

"So, did you find anything?", the Digimon instantly asked.

"Unfortunately, we didn't find any clues at all", the boy responded, clearly disappointed.



Suddenly, the ground started shaking immensely - even stronger than earlier when they met Tyrannomon.

A deep, loud voice sounded from the distance.

"Get this! I can't believe you're still here!", a giant, dark skinned tyrannosaurus-like Digimon yelled as it approached the team.

"M-Master? Mastertyrannomon? To what do I owe the pleasure?", Tyrannomon responded, visibly intimidated.

"In times of crisis, the city needs all hands on deck!", said the enormous Digimon.

"S-so you want me to move to the city, Master?", Tyrannomon asked.

"I don't know why you are still here. Go, get a move on!"

"Okay, you guys, what do you say, can I join the city?", Tyrannomon asked the duo.

"Absolutely, but beware, a lot of work is waiting for you there", said the boy encouragingly.

"Oh great, I will be there! Goodbye, Master!", yelled Tyrannomon as it ran off towards File City.

"Hmm, I wonder what it will do in the city", MasterTyrannomon muttered. "Hey you guys, I haven't guarded this area in a long time. Please pass through any time, you're always welcome!", said the huge Digimon with a giant grin on its face.

The boy wasn't sure if that smile was intimidating because of the large teeth or if it was a simple gesture of kindness.

Either way, it looks like their work in the Ancient Dino Region was done, or was it?

While the duo had an engaging conversation with MasterTyrannomon, Greymon noticed a small, odd-looking Digimon sneak past them.

It went straight into the Speedy Time Zone.

The boy didn't notice it in time so the Digimon was already out of sight.

He sighed. "I guess, we'll have to investigate this, don't we?"

Greymon nodded reluctantly.

So, after taking a well deserved break in the Glacial Time Zone, the duo made their way back into the Speedy Time Zone to track down this sneaky intruder.

Luckily for them, they didn't have to search for long.

Just where they encountered Meteormon, and where Greymon left his little monument behind, the intruder was waiting, cowering in a corner.

It looked like a balding man, but it was just a head, bearded, with sunglasses on - no torso - arms and legs directly attached to the head.

The boy jumped.

"Perhaps it was attracted by the scent of the turd?", he wondered.

He proceeded to engage the mysterious Digimon. "Hey, who are you?"

"Huh? And who are you?", the Digimon responded.

It spun around, confused, then ran off south as it seemed to have dropped something.

The boy walked closer to the item and picked it up.

"Dimensional Key Chain", it said. "Does it hold more items?"

"Oh that's great, I can carry more items now!", the boy shouted with excitement.

"At least we got something from this odd encounter. But now, let's really get out of here, Greymon!"

Greymon looked like he couldn't agree more and thus the duo made their way back to

MasterTyrannomon, leaving the Speedy Time Zone behind for good.

As the guardian Digimon waved the heroes goodbye, they continued their journey onwards.

Of course they haven't forgotten about their first encounter with the bandits.

The battle that had almost shattered the boy's spirit.

He was out for revenge and thus the duo travelled directly from the Tropical Jungle back to the Great Canyon.



After once again crossing the invisible bridge, the boy made sure that his Greymon was well rested and ready for the rematch.

Greymon couldn't be readier, so as the sun was rising and the canyon was flooded with light, the heroic duo stepped towards their toughest challenge yet.

They had to defeat the bandits in order to progress.

Would they be able to overcome the odds this time?

---

## **Chapter Four**

The boy's eyes scanned the horizon warily.

From behind a cluster of broken walls, a group of rough-looking Digimon emerged.

At their head was a hulking creature with a wicked grin and jagged claws - OGREMON.

"And so we meet again, you weaklings, haha", OGREMON growled. "But this territory still belongs to me!"

Greymon growled deeply: "raaaaargh!"

"You want some, huh? Do you think I am intimidated just because you got a bigger dinosaur with you now?", OGREMON shouted aggressively.

OGREMON's gang stepped forward snarlingly. "You don't belong here, human. Back off... or else."

The boy clenched his fists. "We're not leaving! File Island belongs to everyone, and we're going to save it. Ain't no scrappy bandits going to stop us!"

"Did you forget what happened last time?", OGREMON laughed, sharp and cruel. "Bold words for someone so small and weak. Let's see if you can back them up this time!"

Greymon lunged first, teeth bared. The gang of Agumon scattered, snapping and clawing. The boy shouted instructions, coordinating Greymon to flank, block, and attack.

The battle was chaotic, but not as one-sided as last time.

OGREMON and his lackeys fired Magma Bombs in unison but Greymon dodged with agility, striking only when necessary.

OGREMON was seemingly irritated by the unusually agile dinosaur Digimon, so he fired off a bunch of large-scale attacks.

What OGREMON didn't realize was that his attacks also hurt the Agumon gang.

The boy decided to take advantage of the green ogre's blind rage by ordering Greymon to sneak a few smaller attacks at the Agumon until they went down.

So it was now one on one. Greymon versus OGREMON.

At that point, OGREMON had realized what the heroes had done and fell into a frenzy.

"You...you are going to pay for this. It's not over until I say it is!", the enraged Digimon screeched. Despite their efforts, the boy realized that raw strength wouldn't be enough. OGREMON was clever, aggressive, and relentless.

"Greymon! Keep it busy, I'll-", the boy paused, assessing. He saw a pattern in OGREMON's attacks. "Use his momentum against him!"

Greymon tilted his head, understanding. Timing his charges to meet OGREMON's, he dodged and countered, slowly gaining the upper hand.

Finally, OGREMON stumbled, panting, claws lowered.

"Greymon, now", the boy yelled as Greymon fired off a devastating Spinning Shot at OGREMON.



Ogremon collapsed. He was done, the bandits were defeated!

The boy and Greymon celebrated and they slowly approached their defeated foes to maybe talk some sense into them.

However, Ogremon flinched and growled: "you...you're going to pay for this!", as he limped away along with the Agumon gang.

The boy exhaled, relief washing over him. "We finally did it Greymon, we beat the bandits, at least for now! If they appear again, we'll simply hand them another beating, right?"

As they continued through the canyon, the sun dipped low behind the distant hills, casting long shadows over File Island.

Step by step, the boy and Greymon grew a stronger bond and they were ready for whatever challenges lay ahead...

The morning sun spilled gold across Great Canyon and the bitter cold of the night had subsided.

As the heroes got up refreshed and motivated, they decided to continue their path through the canyon to track down Ogremon and his underlings.

The boy had a feeling that the bandits' misdeeds would continue so he had to put an end to them.

The duo strolled around the area looking for suspicious activity when they discovered a sign hanging by a rocky wall. It said: "Danger! Landslides up ahead, proceed with caution!"

"Landslides? we better tread carefully, Greymon", said the boy.

Greymon nodded hesitantly. It was as if he had a bad feeling about the cliff up ahead.

The duo moved towards that cliff slowly, inspecting the edge carefully in hopes of finding something when all of a sudden the boy stopped. "Greymon, did you just feel the ground moving?", he asked.

Greymon slowly shook his head. "Huh, must have been my imagination then, haha", the boy laughed.

It was at that moment when he felt the sensation again. With no time to react, out of nowhere, the ground started forming cracks, becoming brittle and unstable.

"W-what? Oh no!", the boy yelled in distress as the duo lost their footing and fell down a scary cliff.

"Ouch!", the boy cried in agony, however he was more concerned about his partner's wellbeing.

"Greymon, are you okay? I'm sorry I made you take such a bad fall."

Greymon got up and showed no signs of injury. Deep down the boy knew that his Digimon partner was probably hurting but gritting his teeth to not worry him any more than he already was.

The boy dusted himself off and started looking around this new area.

Luckily, they did not get hurt so they were able to continue their search.

"Seems like we landed in an unknown area, Greymon", said the boy.

As they walked around for a little while, they noticed some patrolling Digimon nearby. "Watch out Greymon, these red penguin-like Digimon don't look friendly", the boy warned his partner.

"Wait, where have we seen these guys before? Oh! I remember! In Monochromon's shop! But now's not the time to wallow in memories. We have an island to save!"

The duo swiftly dodged the hostile Digimon only to find another problem up ahead.

An elevator that looked in really bad shape.

"I wonder if it still works? If not, we might be in big trouble since I don't see another way out of here!", the boy worried.

They walked up towards the elevator and tried pressing the button to call it.

"Hmm, it seems like something is stuck in the mechanism", he noticed when all of a sudden he heard a loud crack.

"What was that? Did the weight of the descending elevator just fix the problem for us?", the boy assumed.





And indeed, calling the elevator led to the solution. A rock that was stuck in the mechanism was squeezed out by the sheer force of the descending unit and that seemed to have fixed the issue. The elevator was now operational again.

"That's amazing, Greymon! I guess luck is on our side after all", the boy celebrated. However, his intuition told him not to go back up again just yet.

"Greymon, how about we go south and investigate further? I have a feeling those patrolling Digimon weren't just there for fun. Something smells fishy here!", he told his partner. Greymon seemed to have a similar feeling so he nodded and turned his eyes towards the Muchomon that had quietly overheard their conversation.

The tropical Digimon freaked as it noticed the heroes move towards it. It tried to act all tough by asking them: "hey, where do you think you are going?"

The boy responded: "we're coming through and you are not stopping us!"

Greymon was already preparing for battle when the Muchomon noticed its buddies in the background looking all terrified. Before it knew, its brethren fled the scene and the penguin-like Digimon was all alone, having to fight Greymon.

To no one's surprise, Greymon made quick work of Muchomon as he knocked out the Digimon in a single Magma Bomb blow.

"I give up, I give up, please don't hurt me!", the Muchomon pleaded, as it ran away dropping some healing items.

"We'll be taking these, thank you!", the boy said with a big smile on his face.

He remembered when his partner was just a small Agumon not too long ago, having to consider every single battle carefully to avoid injury.

But now that his partner was all grown up and much stronger, they were able to take on much bigger challenges without running into trouble.

The boy's face was visibly pleased - he was proud. Proud of his partner but also proud of what they had accomplished together in such a short amount of time.

"Let's walk this path, Greymon. I'm sure we will find answers over there!", he urged his partner Digimon.

Greymon happily followed and before they knew it, they found themselves in front of a palisade trench.

"Well, if this doesn't look suspicious, then I don't know what does! I think we just found Ogremon's hideout, Greymon!", the boy concluded.

The palisade trended quite far so the boy suspected this to be an entire fortress.

It was quiet all around, no Digimon, no sounds. A little too quiet for the duo's liking.

Greymon squinted and spotted a yellow creature standing by what looked like an entrance.

The creature turned out to be an Agumon seemingly guarding the main gate. It looked a little exhausted.

"I guess we aren't the only ones that Ogremon treats badly. He doesn't seem to care about his henchmen at all!", the boy wondered - almost feeling bad for the weakened reptile-Digimon.

However, there was no other way inside, so they had to confront the guard directly.

As Agumon spotted the duo, it acted dumb as if it didn't know who they were.

"Who are you guys? what do you want?", Agumon asked.

"You know exactly who we are and what we want!", the boy responded. "We are after your boss and this is his hideout, am I right?"

Agumon tried to act confused: "what are you talking about?"

"Don't play dumb, we know this is a fortress!", the boy reacted.



Agumon realized that it wasn't able to battle them by itself, let alone convince the heroes to leave - so it decided to back out and flee inside the fortress.

This left the entrance completely unguarded and open to enter, so that's exactly what the boy and Greymon did.

What they found was a smelly, untidy hallway with some furniture and a makeshift wallpaper that looked like it would break at the slightest sign of dampness.

However, the team did not have much time to explore their surroundings as they were immediately attacked by a rowdy group of Gabumon.

"Looks like the welcoming committee is here, Greymon!", the boy laughed. "But let's try to save our energy for later and dodge these guys!"

Greymon obeyed and so they managed to cut their way through the enemy lines without engaging in unnecessary battles.

While exploring this dungeon, the heroes found a bunch of items hidden in treasure boxes that were scattered around everywhere.

Some of these items were edible and some others were for healing purposes which would come in handy at some point.

A short while later, the heroes found themselves in a room that resembled a kitchen. It even had a fridge and kitchen utensils!

"Wow, I guess these bandits really do live here!", the boy said, surprised by all the furniture and decoration that looked straight out of the human world.

But his fascination was short-lived as he was knocked out of the skies by the presence of an Agumon-trio staring at the heroes menacingly.

They seemed to guard the entrance to the main room - most likely OGREMON's whereabouts.

"It doesn't look like they would move, Greymon. So you know what we have to do, let's make them move!", the boy cheered on his partner.

Greymon, already in his battle stance, snarlingly approached the trio of Agumon.

All of a sudden, one of them yelled: "Formation A! Go!"

The Agumon began to move in patterns, surrounding Greymon and firing off a coordinated attack that hit its mark.

Greymon flinched, but didn't back down.

"Oh no, Greymon, are you okay? That attack was definitely not a random one, I guess they have learned from their past mistakes and came up with a strategy. But we won't go down that easily. Let's dish out a counterattack!", the boy yelled.

Greymon got into position and released a powerful Spinning Shot with all three hits connecting on each Agumon.

They looked visibly stunned, so the duo took advantage and fired off another round.

A second Spinning Shot did the trick and the battle was won!

"We did it, Greymon! Good job! However, we will have to be careful of those well coordinated attacks, especially when it is three on one!", the boy explained.

Greymon nodded while already surveilling his surroundings in case there were more enemies approaching.

It didn't seem that way so the team moved forward.

They arrived in the final room which looked like a big living room.

In the background, the boy spotted a huge skull hanging from the wall.



"Jeez, this looks like a Greymon skull. I hope my Greymon never ends up like this", the boy thought to himself. He didn't want to say this out loud.

Right at the entrance, another pair of Agumon were on guard but this time, they didn't seem to be aggressive. They were observing the heroes.

"I guess they have learned from their buddies' mistakes", the boy suspected.

The duo managed to sneak past the two Agumon and in the distance, they saw them: Ogremon and his henchmen - resting near a kotatsu, most likely plotting their next raids.

"We will not let them have it their way", said the boy - determined to stop their evildoings once and for all.

"Hey!", he yelled far into the room.

Ogremon looked up at them. "Oh no", he quietly said. "Not these guys again."

"So, this is your hideout, huh? Are you planning your next ambush from here?", the boy confronted the bandits.

"That's none of your business!", Ogremon barked at them. "How did you even find me? Wait, you know what? I don't even want to know. I will crush you right here, right now!"

"Go ahead and try, you scoundrel", the boy countered. "Let's go Greymon, it's now or never!"

Greymon looked all fired up and ready to go as he already charged at one of the Agumon. He made short work of the small lizard Digimon.

It almost looked like Greymon was in a frenzy, however he never lost control and always took the boy's commands to heart.

He simply was eager to finally be able to stop the bandit's wrongdoings by winning this battle.

However, the battle was not over just yet.

After easily taking out the second Agumon, only the big boss, Ogremon was left - however, he seemed all out of sorts and not moving very well.

The recent battle must have taken its toll on Ogremon. That's how strong Greymon and the boy had become.

And so, Greymon managed to corner the Ogremon and fire off a powerful Mega Flame to finish the fight.

"Victory is ours!", the boy proclaimed proudly. "Give up, you lost, there is nowhere to run now, Ogremon!"

It was done, the bandits were defeated and the raids would finally come to an end.

Or so the boy thought.

The grizzled, cunning ogre Digimon had one more ace up his sleeve.

And unfortunately for the heroes, it would prove to be decisive.

"Y-you think you won, huh?", Ogremon coughed.

He had trouble breathing and was visibly hurt. Part of his horn had broken off but that seemed to lit a fire inside his body. Strong enough to make him get up and flee towards a small opening in the wall.

"Goodbye forever, you idiots!", Ogremon wheezed as he pressed a button and escaped via an emergency elevator hidden in the walls of the fortress.

"Are you kidding me?", the boy screamed. "We got tricked, Greymon! Go, go, we have to go after him!"

However, it was already too late and Ogremon fled the scene.

Greymon was still trying to gather himself after this intense battle.

Meanwhile, the boy approached the opening in the wall and discovered the secret switch.



"Damn, I should have looked around the room more carefully. How could I miss this obvious escape route? This was my mistake, Greymon, I'm sorry!", the boy apologized.

Greymon did not seem to mind it at all.

He had a determined look on his face, as if he was trying to cheer up the boy by focusing on the task at hand.

"Yes, Greymon, I know what you want to say. I have to focus on the facts and accept the current situation. You're right. Let's do the best we can to chase down the enemy!"

Greymon looked delighted and so the boy pressed the secret button which triggered a mechanical sound. An elevator was indeed approaching.

The duo entered the small cabin which had "emergency elevator" written on the ceiling.

And so, they managed to leave OGREMON's fortress via the elevator, finding themselves in an unknown part of Great Canyon.

"We haven't been here yet, but there is only one path forward, so let's go!", the boy said.

The duo followed the narrow path which led them over a couple of tattered bridges connecting small plateaus to one another.

After walking for a few minutes, their path got blocked by a hungry looking Goblimon.

"This Digimon is probably part of OGREMON's gang. Let's interrogate this guy, Greymon."

"Hey, you!", the boy opened.

"Who me? Am I in your way?", Goblimon responded.

"You are, and you will tell us where your boss went!", the boy demanded.

However, the Goblimon seemed to have no intention of providing information.

Instead it charged at the boy with its bone club, seemingly trying to knock him off the cliff.

Lightning fast, Greymon reacted and fired off a spit fire attack, torching the Goblimon's bone club in an instant.

As Greymon realized what the hostile Digimon was trying to accomplish, he grew visibly enraged and charged a massive Spinning Shot attack - probably the most powerful one he had ever delivered. The Goblimon was forcefully blown off of the cliff, leaving no trace behind.

"That's right, if you want to hurt me, you will feel the wrath of Greymon!", the boy explained - peaking down the cliff.

"Okay, maybe that was a bit too harsh...Sorry, I got a bit carried away there", he laughed. "Thank you for protecting me, buddy!"

Greymon went from intense to smiling in an instant as soon as the threat was neutralized.

"Unfortunately, we didn't get any hints about OGREMON's whereabouts but I'm sure we will cross paths again in the future! For now, let's move forward and continue our journey!", the boy told his partner as he praised him for the big victories he secured in the fortress.

And so, the heroes took a short rest, before advancing the canyon's narrow paths.

---

## Chapter Five

After resting for a while, the boy and Greymon got up, stretched and continued scanning their surroundings.



"Let's just follow this path, buddy!", the boy urged his partner.

As they crossed yet another narrow bridge, they noticed a rather large boulder with a grass patch on top piling up.

It looked quite odd, so the boy inspected it further.

However, he couldn't find anything unusual other than the conspicuous looks of the huge rock.

Just when he was about to leave it be and move forward, he suddenly heard a voice shouting desperately: "h-hello? Is somebody there? Help, please I need help!"

The boy was startled.

Did he hear that right? Somebody needed help?

He paused - but then he responded to the voice.

"Hello? Yes, I can hear you!"

"Who's there? I was passing through here when I heard a mechanical sound - then the ground suddenly started moving on its own and now I am trapped up here and can't get back down on my own!", the voice explained.

"I'm a human from another world and this is my partner Greymon. How can we help you?", the boy asked.

"Human? What's that supposed to be? Ah, it doesn't matter right now. I don't know but maybe it's something you did from where you came?", the voice implied.

The boy started thinking and suddenly it came to him.

"Oh yes, I got it! We used OGREMON's emergency elevator not too long ago. Maybe that's what triggered the mechanism to pile up the ground."

The unknown creature responded: "could I ask you to backtrack and see what might have triggered this thing? I'd hate to be stuck here for the rest of my days!"

"Bit dramatic, eh?", the boy was thinking to himself - he wouldn't want to say that out loud of course.

"Okay, we will go back and check things out for you", he reassured the victim.

"Thank you, I hope to see you soon!", the voice thanked him.

And so, Greymon and the boy made their way back where they came from.

Crossing the narrow bridges and moving from plateau to plateau until they reached the emergency elevator leading back into OGREMON's fortress.

The boy realized that once they went downstairs again, they couldn't use the very same elevator to get back up.

But that's when he remembered that he recently found a very useful item and this was the right time to finally use it. The Autopilot - an instant free return to File City.

"Wow, this world really has some rather useful things to offer", he thought to himself.

"Okay Greymon, once we are back in the fortress, we will use the Autopilot to return to File City - and while we're there we can rest up, restock some food and battle items and check in with Jijimon. I'm sure a lot has changed!"

Greymon nodded happily. He was visibly delighted to be able to return home, even if only for a little while.

So the duo did exactly that, magically appearing in front of Jijimon's house.

"Let's do all the shopping later, we have an old fella to report back to!", the boy suggested.

As they walked through Jijimon's front door, the village elder already spotted them and happily welcomed them back.

"Wow, you look so much stronger, both you and Greymon. I have lots of things to tell you! Your efforts made a bunch of Digimon return to the city, like Tyrannomon who's become a chef and opened a restaurant alongside Meramon. I also talked to Monochromon who told me that it wanted to open a brand new item shop. What a professional! This is all thanks to you both, I can't thank you enough. The city is prospering and looks completely different from before - but there is still a long way to go."



The duo was visibly tired, of course from their recent adventures but also from the amount of words a single old Digimon could speak.

The boy responded: "thanks for your support, Jijimon, but I think it's time for us to rest a bit and restock our supplies, is that ok?"

"Why of course, but please feel free to return later so we can talk some more!", Jijimon urged them.

The boy already had other things on his mind.

Yes, it was important to catch up but it was even more important to keep moving forward.

However, Rome also wasn't built in a single day.

They need to properly rest and plan their next steps, like returning to Great Canyon to rescue the trapped creature they have been encountering earlier.

"Let's find a good place to rest Greymon, you look tired!", the boy suggested.

Greymon was pleased to hear this and so the duo left Jijimon's house - but what happened next was anything but pleasant or relaxing.

It was suddenly so quiet - an almost eerie atmosphere overcame them.

"Something's up, Greymon, I can feel it! Did you hear that?", the boy shuddered.

It sounded like somebody or something was approaching the duo with huge steps.

Greymon, although exhausted from their journeys, became laser focused on the incoming threat. He became even more tense than usual, so the boy assumed that this could spell danger for the city.

And then it appeared - the boy couldn't believe his eyes.

As the sun was setting, a large, dinosaur Digimon walked up on them and simply stood there.

It wasn't just any dinosaur Digimon. In fact, the boy was very familiar with the appearance.

It was another Greymon! A Greymon had appeared before their eyes - right in front of Jijimon's house.

The boy took a defensive stance, signaling that every villager should stay back.

He whispered to his partner Greymon: "hey, I'm going to try and talk to this one, maybe I can convince it to leave again without a fight. I know you are tired and we haven't restocked our battle items yet, so I want to avoid a fight if possible."

The boy's Greymon got the memo and took a step back to stand by.

The invading Greymon let out a huge roar - not an aggressive one in particular but it portrayed a sense of urgency. This Digimon was here for something and it probably wouldn't leave without achieving it.

It scanned the boy and his Greymon - not surprised or startled in the slightest that a member of the same species was present. It looked determined and ready.

"Ahh, finally arrived!", it growled. "I've been looking for this place. Hey, you there!"

The boy tried to hide his insecurity and responded: "yes?"

"I travelled all the way to this city because I want my own Dojo. Give me that sign!", the Greymon demanded.

At this moment, the boy had to drop his poker face due to genuine confusion. "What? That's not a sign", he reacted while visibly puzzled.

"I don't care, let's fight then!", Greymon countered.

This was exactly what the boy tried to avoid but he realized that this Greymon was a feisty, over-zealous one and wouldn't take no for an answer.

Before he could even get into position and strategize with his partner, the hostile Greymon already charged at the duo.





"I don't care if you are a Digimon or whatever you may be. I challenged you to a fight so you have to accept!", the attacker barked while charging a flame-type attack in its mouth.

"Greymon, watch out, it's already attacking!", the boy warned his partner.

Greymon, despite the exhaustion, got ready and took his fighting stance.

There was no way he would refuse a showdown between two Greymon.

Such a rare opportunity surely wouldn't come twice.

The boy's partner dodged an incoming Magma Bomb and fired one of his own, hitting the mark.

"Ouch, that really did...", the Greymon said, stopped, then followed up with a "not hurt! Ha! You need to come up with something stronger if you want to beat me!", and then immediately fired off another round of attacks.

The boy's Greymon struggled with the opponent's powerful attacks, but he also was aware of the opponent's moves and possible strategies. He was a Greymon after all.

However, the exhaustion then kicked in and Greymon was hit by a devastating Dynamite Kick that knocked him down.

"Greymon!", the boy yelled in distress. "Get up, you can do it!"

Greymon mustered up all of his strength and got back up.

That's when the boy noticed an irregularity in the opposing Greymon's movement pattern.

"Wait a second", he was thinking. "Isn't this Greymon moving particularly slow? What's wrong? Maybe the long journey to File City also took its toll on this Digimon's body?"

The boy continued to scan the Digimon's movements and finally confirmed it.

"I'm sure now, this Greymon is masking its fatigue by using mostly long ranged attacks. But when it got closer to land a Dynamite Kick, that's when the truth was exposed. We have to take advantage of this."

"Greymon!", he yelled. "I have an idea. Try to keep it at a distance at all times. It probably thinks it has to go for another Dynamite Kick to finish you off since this strategy worked earlier. But look at its movements, it's much slower than you so we have to use this fact to our advantage!"

Greymon looked back at the boy and nodded slightly.

The opposing Greymon noticed the change in strategy and seemed to have grown frustrated.

"Hey you cowards, stop running from me and face me head on", it barked.

"Don't let it provoke you, Greymon," the boy warned his partner. "Continue this strategy until you can finish it off with your Mega Flame, got it?"

Greymon understood, executed and managed to back his opponent into a corner. He fired a powerful Mega Flame that dealt massive damage.

Enough to finally take down the enemy.

"Yes, we did it, Greymon. Amazing job, you did exactly as...err, Greymon?", said the boy as his Digimon partner collapsed shortly after his opponent did.

The boy's Digimon collapsed from sheer exhaustion but it also looked like he sustained an injury in the battle.

"I'm sorry Greymon, I should have paid more attention to your health", the boy regretfully cried.

Greymon slowly opened his eyes and looked at his partner, as if he wanted to tell him that it wasn't his fault and that this was necessary in order for them to win this intense battle.

After a short while, the invading Greymon opened its eyes as well and realized that it was in fact the loser.

"Wow, you guys are good. I certainly don't lose often!", it seemed to praise the duo.



"Right back at you", the boy responded. "You gave us a hell of a fight. If you were at 100% you would have most likely wiped the floor with us!"

"Ah, so you did notice", Greymon praised the boy. "I came to the city to open a Dojo. An Arena, in fact. A Digimon city needs a place for friendly and fierce competition. Signing up will be free of charge and there will be money & item prizes. The more Digimon join the city, the more tournaments I can host. Sounds good? What do you say?"

The boy was collecting his thoughts for a second and then gave Greymon his answer.

"Yes, that is in fact a great idea! Welcome to File City!"

Greymon laughed.

"Haha, I was hoping you'd say so. That way I can also stay and train you and your partner. You still have a lot to learn."

And so, an unexpected new companion joined the city.

As the boy ran his partner to Centarumon's clinic to treat his injury, he made sure to stock up on enough healing items to be prepared for any upcoming battles.

After a good night's rest, the duo woke up all excited and eager to continue their journey.

Greymon seemed to be fully healed thanks to Centarumon's effective treatment and it was time for a big breakfast before their departure.

That's when the boy remembered that File City now has its very own restaurant so he decided to pay the new establishment a visit.

When Greymon noticed where they were headed, he got more excited by the second.

What delicious meals would he be able to eat in the brand new restaurant?

The duo entered the building that resembled a giant microwave and saw both Meramon and Tyrannomon arguing behind the counter.

They were visibly upset about something.

"Hey guys, what's wrong?", the boy intervened.

Meramon looked back at the duo and responded: "nothing to see here, I'm just explaining to this rookie how to run the register because it keeps making mistakes!"

"Mistakes? Are you kidding me?", Tyrannomon responded. "You have been doing things wrong this whole time. You should be grateful that I moved here recently, otherwise this place would have closed down before even serving a single customer!"

"Are you serious? I won't let that one slide, you sorry excuse for a T-Rex!", Meramon reacted heatedly.

The two chefs kept going back and forth but Greymon wasn't in the mood for an argument - he was hungry and wanted to eat, so he let out a big roar followed up by a loud stomp on the ground.

The boy interfered: "hey guys, I think it's time to settle this argument. As you can see my partner here is very hungry and I think something very bad is going to happen if he doesn't get to eat soon!"

The boy looked back at Greymon with a smirk as the two chefs simmered down.

"Y-yes, you are right, we shouldn't make such a scene in front of a paying customer, right Meramon?", Tyrannomon responded nervously.

"Absolutely, how may we satisfy your hungry companion?", Meramon asked.

And so, this little inconvenience was taken care of - not in the most elegant way, but it was surely effective enough.

Minutes later, Greymon gorged on a juicy T-bone steak and some piping hot curry chicken courtesy of Tyrannomon and Meramon.



"Thank you, Greymon really liked both dishes", the boy praised the two chefs. "From now on, please settle your arguments in the back or even better, don't get too heated all the time, got it?"

"Yes, sir!", both Digimon responded in unison.

Now that Greymon's hunger and the villager's problems were taken care of, it was time to keep the promise the duo made with the mysterious, trapped creature in Great Canyon.

Making their way through Native Forest and Tropical Jungle, the heroes arrived at the designated area rather quickly.

And it seems their strategy had worked!

Right in front of them, waiting on the lowered plateau, was a big, pink, Digimon with an imposing shell on its back.

"Are you my saviors?", the Digimon asked the duo.

"Yes, I'm glad we got you down from there. So, who are you?", the boy asked.

"What? Impossible!", the aquatic Digimon yelled.

It was startled.

"You don't know who I am? Amongst Digimon, I am well known as a know-it-all! My name is Shellmon. In fact, I was on my way to File City to offer my services there and that's when I got caught up in this mess, you see?"

"Oh, I understand!", the boy responded, secretly looking back at Greymon to see if he actually knew who the Digimon in front of them was. "But now that all of this is taken care of, you are still going to join the city, right?"

"Why of course", Shellmon responded, all excited. "See you in the city then, human!"

As the big Digimon hopped away towards File City, the boy was asking himself if it was really going to be of any use.

Greymon tried to distract from this odd encounter by pointing towards the area directly neighboring the Great Canyon.

The ice-cold Freezeland.

It was time to enter the most dangerous region yet.

---

## **Chapter Six**

The heroes entered the frosty region and Greymon's expression turned from happy to unpleasant in a matter of moments.

This area was uncomfortable for heat-loving Digimon such as Greymon but he tried not to show any signs of discomfort whenever the boy turned around to check on his partner.

Unfortunately, this would come back to haunt the brave Digimon later.

While the entrance to Freezeland had a heater for cold visitors to use and warm up at - the deeper they progressed, the lower the temperatures were sinking.

But there was no other way, the boy knew they had to endure the sheer cold in order to discover more parts of the island and of course to recruit possible residents for File City.



After a bit of walking, Greymon wasn't able to hide his discomfort any longer. The frosty weather took its toll on the Digimon's energy levels and so the boy's partner signaled it was time to eat and recharge some energy.

The boy noticed his partner's struggle and suggested a break and a meal for his Digimon. That's when he realized that he forgot to buy some essentials back in the city. He forgot to restock their food supplies. No meat from the farm was picked up and nothing was purchased in the item shop apart from some healing items. "Damn!", the boy cursed. "I was so distracted by that Greymon intruder that I downright forgot to restock our food supplies. What should I feed my Digimon now?"

That's when the boy spotted the wrapped up suspicious looking meat he acquired a while ago in the Ancient Dino Region. It was from that vending machine that offered random items.

The boy remembered that Greymon wasn't opposed to eating that moldy looking meat - in fact the Digimon showed some interest in the odd food. "Should I really give this to Greymon?", the boy was doubtfully thinking to himself. "What if he rejects it? But then again, I have to feed my Digimon something. I guess I will give it a try."

And so the boy offered the moldy meat to his Digimon partner. After sniffing it out for a bit, the hunger got to Greymon, so he decided to chomp away at the well aged meat. "So, how is it?", the boy asked. Greymon didn't seem to mind the taste and swallowed the meat rather quickly.

But a few seconds later, the Digimon's expression changed. It looked like he was already suffering from the food's effects. "Greymon?", the boy yelled. "What's wrong? Are you okay?" His partner looked not okay in the slightest. The meat seemed to have caused Greymon to fall sick, however the boy wasn't quite sure what that meant. He didn't know if Digimon contracted diseases like humans do or what would happen to Greymon now that he was in this state.

It certainly did not help that they were in Freezeland which was giving Greymon troubles already. And if that wasn't enough bad luck, a snow storm started raging through the area and it became gradually more difficult to find a way forward. "How did this go from bad to worse in a matter of moments?", the boy was desperately questioning himself. "I have to find a way out of here or Greymon might possibly die!"

He didn't have any medicine on him and he was slowly starting to panic. "I have to do something", he said as he tried to drag his partner Digimon along. This proved to be an impossible feat of strength as the heavy Greymon got weaker and weaker and collapsed shortly after. The boy let out a yell of desperation and tried to muster his strength to pull Greymon along. However, he slipped on an icy rock that wasn't visible due to all the fresh snow. He fell and hit his head causing him to lose consciousness.

As his vision was fading, he tried to verbalize his concern but no words would come out of his mouth.

His eyes slowly closed...



What would happen to him and Greymon now?

The snow would completely cover them and possibly freeze them to death.

Was this the end of the heroes' journey?

Luckily for them, not quite yet.

A mere moments later, a big, white, snowy creature emerged from the blizzard and found the duo passed out on the ground.

The creature was startled at first but then acted fast.

Its powerful and large body was strong enough to lift both Greymon and the boy onto its shoulders.

And so it carried the blacked out team to safety - an igloo-like house made from digital snow and ice.

This is where the mysterious creature nursed the boy and Greymon back to health.

It seemed to be very knowledgeable in first-aid and treatment of hypothermia so it managed to get their body temperatures to return to normal.

After a few hours, the boy and Greymon would finally wake up.

Not knowing where they were or what had happened after their blackout.

The creature was sitting in front of them. It turned out to be a Digimon, too. A large, white, snowman-like appearance.

"F-Frigimon?", the boy said, voice still weakened and low. "You are a Frigimon, aren't you? What happened? Where is Greymon?"

The Frigimon's expression turned from neutral to infuriated. "This was all your fault! How could you be so reckless? Don't you know that Greymon can't stand the cold? You both would have died if I hadn't saved you back then!", it started bombarding the boy with accusations.

The boy didn't even know what was going on - he was still dizzy and confused - but Frigimon continued: "you don't even know the first thing about raising a Digimon properly, you should be ashamed of yourself!"

As he slowly came to, the boy realized that Frigimon was indeed the one who saved him and Greymon.

"T-thank you for saving us, you really saved our lives there!", he said.

Frigimon wasn't responding - instead it still looked infuriated.

"Maybe I should invite it to the city", the boy was thinking to himself. "Could I ask you for another favor, maybe?", he asked.

"I'm going to stop you right there", Frigimon interrupted. "Don't you see your wrongdoing here? And here you go asking me for a favor when you haven't even learned from your mistakes? What if Greymon collapses again when you two are marching through Freezeland again? Do you realize the gravity of your decision to bring your Digimon partner here?"

The boy realized this wasn't a good time to be asking Frigimon for another favor and so he let the angry Digimon continue its antics.

"I got it", the boy shouted!

Frigimon stopped - visibly confused.

"I will let Greymon digivolve into a different Digimon!", the boy said as he took Greymon and left Frigimon's house.

Frigimon didn't know what to make of this claim and just looked on as the duo exited its home.

"D-Digivolve? Different Digimon?", Frigimon repeated.



"Thank you for saving us, Frigimon!", the boy shouted back at the Digimon as he left with his partner. "Frigimon was right, this was all my fault. But I have learned my lesson and I won't ever let you go through pain like this ever again", the boy promised Greymon. Greymon, who looked much healthier and seemingly fully recovered, nodded at the boy as if he wanted to imply: "I forgive you, we make mistakes and we learn from them, like we always have."

The duo took Frigimon's advice to heart and made their way towards the entrance of Freezeland, back to Great Canyon where it wasn't this incredibly cold. Luckily for them, the snow storm had subsided so this time around, they had an easier time traversing the snowy paths back to the entrance plains.

Back at Great Canyon, the boy remembered that he still hasn't used that one elevator they had fixed a while back.

"Ah I almost forgot! The elevator that had a rock stuck inside. We managed to fix it but never ended up using it. Shall we go for it now, Greymon?"

Greymon wiggled with his tail and looked eager to explore a new part of the canyon.

The duo approached the elevator in question and the boy pressed a button that said "UP".

"I guess we are going up since the last time around we were exploring the lower levels of the canyon", he concluded.

The elevator arrived and it seemed to be working flawlessly.

The duo got in and the elevator would quickly take them upwards to an area that seemed to be the top of a cliff.

"Wow, we are really high up now! Wait, what's that over there?", the boy wondered.

He spotted something out of the ordinary so the duo walked closer to check it out.

They walked over what looked like a bird's nest.

A bunch of items were placed in that nest, ranging from junk to things the boy had seen in the human world before.

There even was a giant clock right next to the nest, however the clockhands were all twisted and bent.

This unusual spot didn't seem to bother the boy too much as he had seen plenty of odd places in this world before.

Instead he and Greymon were amazed at the great view they got from up there.

This was a good opportunity to scout the island from above, possibly find new places and look back at familiar ones.

However, this silent moment of peace didn't last long.

They perceived a sound coming from the distance.

"Greymon, did you hear that?", the boy asked. But Greymon didn't seem to have noticed anything out of the ordinary.

That's when the sound rang out again.

Greymon looked up and heard it too. It was getting closer to the duo and it sounded like some sort of beast roaring.

"Get ready Greymon, I don't think the creature that made this sound likes the fact that we are here right now", the boy feared.

In fact, said creature was yet another Digimon that had suddenly appeared before the duo.

Flaming body, flaming wings, sharp white claws and teeth and a penetrating glance on its face.

It was Birdramon, a flaming bird-like Digimon.

Its wings emitted immense heat as it was flapping in front of the duo.

No words, no time to explain. The Digimon was hostile and didn't seem to like the duo's presence.





"Oh no, do you think we invaded Birdramon's nest, Greymon?", the boy asked.  
At that moment, Birdramon's face had already turned tense and it was charging up its first attack.  
"Be careful, Greymon. Big attack incoming!", the boy warned his partner.  
Greymon was not able to dodge the powerful attack known as Prominence Beam - a laserbeam-like, extremely hot attack.  
The small size of the battlefield proved to be a disadvantage for a dinosaur Digimon like Greymon. Even if he tried to jump or dodge, there would be a high risk of falling off of the cliff.

Birdramon with its wings however, didn't have any problems maneuvering around Greymon and so the battle became quite difficult due to these circumstances.  
"We gotta play it smart here, buddy", the boy encouraged his partner.  
He remembered that he picked up some battle items back in the city's item shop, so he tried using some of them on Greymon to speed up the battle.  
"Some attack and speed boosts are coming your way, Greymon! Get in position and then release your Spinning Shot!", the boy strategized.

Birdramon didn't seem to adjust to the new strategy and kept repeating the same move over and over again.  
"If it keeps this up, we can win this battle", the boy whispered to Greymon.

The repetitive movement of the hostile Digimon became predictable after a while and Greymon adjusted to the battle style, managing to dodge a bunch of Prominence Beams, despite the narrow battle field.  
A few Spinning Shots and a powerful Mega Flame later, Birdramon sank to the floor, collapsing on its nest.

The battle was won.

"We did it, Greymon!", the boy celebrated.  
Another victory was theirs.  
"Are you okay?", he asked Birdramon. "I'm sorry, we didn't know this was your nest and we didn't mean to disturb you! We got here by chance while exploring the canyon."  
Birdramon sat up, slowly recovering from the battle.  
"It's okay, don't worry", the defeated Digimon confirmed.  
"You are not mad at us?", the boy responded - surprised at Birdramon's reaction.  
"No, in fact, I have heard of you two already. I was actively thinking about joining your city but having fought you and Greymon, I am now convinced that you can save this island!", Birdramon explained.  
"Wow, that's amazing!", the boy celebrated.  
"Actually, do you want to go there right now? I will fly you there!", Birdramon suggested.

The boy nodded with joy on his face, then looking back at Greymon who wasn't amused at all.  
The big Digimon was visibly worried at how he was going to be carried by a flying Digimon like Birdramon.  
"Don't worry, I have carried around bigger cargo than you two, haha", Birdramon laughed and winked at Greymon.

And so, the duo was transported back to File City alongside Birdramon who moved there.

Birdramon's service for the city was particularly useful as it offered a flying taxi, bringing the heroes to any area they had visited before - of course not free of charge but this service would come in very handy for the duo from that point on.

So, they were back in File City, back to where it all started.



The first thing the boy took care of was restocking his food supplies so Greymon wouldn't have to eat dubious looking food ever again.

While picking up some Giant meat from Palmon's meat farm, Tanemon saw them walk by and gave them some hints.

"Do you see this flowerpot next to me?", Tanemon asked. "I planted a Rain Fruit there that usually can be harvested around the 15th of each year."

The boy was trying to remember what day it was at the time. He still had to get used to the Digimon World's calendar system as it wasn't the same as the one he was used to at home.

He would definitely come back here on the 15th to pick up the Rain Fruit Tanemon talked about.

After restocking his items, the boy suggested to pay Jijimon another visit, hoping for advice on their next steps.

Jijimon was happy to see them back and offered them a seat.

A few hours passed as they talked and came up with plans to effectively explore the island without leaving out a single part.

Their next destination would be Mt. Panorama, a mountain area that was recently blocked off by a landslide.

Immovable rocks were in the way of the only entry to the area but some residents told Jijimon that there were rumors about the rocks magically disappearing.

The duo decided to investigate this, so after a restful night of sleep, they set out to new adventures on File Island.

---

## **Chapter Seven**

The entry to Mt. Panorama wasn't that far off from File City, so the duo managed to get there quickly. As they got there, they really did see an open path leading towards the new area.

"So the rumors were true and the path was cleared!", the boy expressed. "Maybe the earthquake that Meramon was causing inside Drill Tunnel was the catalyst!"

And so they continued their journey towards Mt. Panorama.

It seemed to be a closed off, quiet and rather peaceful area with not many hostile Digimon roaming around.

The duo managed to scare off a bunch of patrolling Goblimon and walked deeper into the region. Some of the mountain walls looked odd to the boy as they featured a bunch of power sockets and other electrical components that are usually found in technical devices from the human world.

"You know Greymon, I really wonder why there are so many things resembling the human world here, but then they are in such odd places that don't make that much sense, like the vending machines in the wild, the power sockets in the mountain wall or the weird things we have seen in OGREMON's fortress. Up until now, I have always just accepted them as this world's oddities but why would they be so similar to things from where I come from?", the boy wondered. "Ah, I'm sure I will find out more secrets about this world as we explore".

Greymon didn't seem to understand too much about the boy's ramblings but happily followed him anywhere he was going.

After walking for a little while longer, the boy noticed another Digimon in the distance.

But this one he hadn't seen before. It didn't seem to move a lot so he decided to cautiously approach it and investigate.



As they got closer, they noticed that this winged horse-like Digimon looked hurt. It was crouching in a corner and seemed to be in agony.

"Hey, who are you, is everything okay?", the boy carefully asked.

The Digimon tried to respond despite the pain on its face: "I'm Unimon, I hurt my wing not too long ago and now I can't fly anymore."

"Oh no, I'm sorry to hear", the boy responded. "Let me see if I have something against the injury." He took off his backpack and started digging.

"Ah yes, this should do it?", he said as he pulled out a Small Recovery Disk - a commonly used healing item in this world, or so he assumed.

He gave the item to Unimon who had a much more relieved facial expression after consuming the medicine.

"Ah that felt good. My injury seems to be more severe but I think I can fly a small distance now", Unimon explained.

"There's a medical facility in File City, not too far from here. Do you think you can fly there?", the boy suggested.

"Yes, I think that should work. I know the way so I will go there right now! Thank you so much for your help despite not knowing who I am. I hope I can return the favor some day", Unimon said as it took off towards the city.

And just like that, another resident for the city was recruited, although in an unusual way.

The boy spotted a bunch of item chests nearby and decided to loot them while exploring the Mt. Panorama region further.

The duo had landed in an area that was jammed with what seemed like giant spores and plants. And indeed, on a signpost it said: "Mt. Panorama - Spore Region".

An unusual scent was in the air and the boy was quite surprised by the exotic flora in this region. Just as they were done with looting the chests, they noticed something out of the ordinary on the ground.

"Wait, I haven't seen something like this before?", the boy said. "Is this one of those strange circles?" It looked like some drawings or markings that somebody had put there.

However, there were no further clues that helped investigate this finding so the duo decided to move forward while keeping this area in the back of their minds.

After a bit of walking, the team reached wide, green plains and a bunch of big, brown Digimon marching around.

The boy remembered Frigimon from the Freezeland and was quite surprised to see these Digimon that looked just like them - only colored differently.

"This world sure has a lot of creatures living in it, right Greymon?", the boy marveled as he was staring into the distance, reminiscing a bit.

He sure missed his home and of course his mother who he left behind without ever saying goodbye - wondering how she was doing.

She was probably in a state of worry and fear due to her son going missing.

But how could he contact her to tell her that he was okay? He didn't even have a clue as to how he could escape this world - even if he actively wanted to leave.

But the boy also knew that he had a job to do that only he was able to get done.

This world needed him and that's why he was summoned here.

He splashed some water on his face at a nearby spring and tried to focus on the task at hand again.

Greymon, who had a look of concern on his face, was much more relieved after seeing his partner back to his normal self.



"Sorry Greymon, I didn't mean to worry you. I'm okay! I'm just missing my home a little bit. But that doesn't mean that I'm not enjoying my time here with you. Let's continue our journey, I think I have seen a new area at the foot of the mountain, so if we can make it there before nightfall, we might be able to find a comfier spot to camp at, what do you say?"

Greymon nodded and let out a big squeal.

It was time to keep walking ahead.

The boy spotted a signpost in the western part of the plains: "ah, this gives us some directions, great!" The sign said: "South: Mt. Panorama - West: Gear Savanna."

"Gear Savanna?", said the boy, reading the sign. "Sounds interesting, I wonder what kind of Digimon we will find there?"

There was a path leading downhill, so the duo decided to follow it.

However, a bunch of Digimon were patrolling around the narrow pathways, so they had to be careful.

They didn't want to provoke any of these creatures and trigger unnecessary fights.

After some crafty dodging, they managed to reach the foot of the mountain.

Some more Digimon were patrolling around the area but they didn't seem to be as aggressive as the ones who lived higher up in the mountains.

It was time to rest - thankfully a bathroom was just around the corner, so the duo decided to take a break.

After Greymon got his business done, had a delicious snack and took a nap, the heroes decided to enter this new and unknown area known as Gear Savanna.

An electrical sign indicated the entrance and so they went ahead.

"Wow, this truly feels like a Savanna. It's hot and there is not much vegetation around here", the boy gaped. "Wow, what is that giant appearance in the distance? Maybe a fata morgana?", he wondered. Due to the hot air, everything in the distance looked wobbly and blurry, so the duo had to traverse the savanna to find answers.

"Look, Greymon! There's another sign over here. It says: Up Ahead: Mt. Trash", the boy noticed.

"Mt. Trash? Oh dear god, I wonder what's going to await us there".

There were two possible paths the team could take but they decided to take a right first, as the boy spotted a vending machine.

"Is this one of these machines with random contents again?", he thought to himself.

This vending machine however had a set variety of items it was selling, but the prices were too high for the boy's liking so he decided not to purchase anything.

As they turned away from the machine, they were caught off-guard by a large rooster-like Digimon aggressively charging at them.

"Watch out, Greymon!", the boy yelled but it was too late and the Digimon, known as Akatorimon, already launched their first attack at Greymon.

However, with Greymon's battle experience and gained prowess, this hostile Digimon was dealt with rather quickly - and so the heroes were able to continue their path up north.

The path got narrow and cliffs were towering around the heroes when off in the distance Greymon spotted a Digimon in distress.

It was a Patamon and it seemed to be running from another Digimon chasing them.

"Help me!", the Patamon yelled in desperation.

"That poor Digimon", the boy said.

Patamon was chased by a frenzied Goblimon who didn't even flinch at the sight of the much larger Greymon.



"Something's not right with this guy", the boy muttered. "Greymon, let's help this poor fella out here!" Just as Greymon was about to stop the Goblimon from attacking Patamon, a voice could be heard from up above.

Out of nowhere, somebody said: "don't bully the weaker and smaller, you fool!"

"Who was that?", the boy wondered.

On top of a cliff stood a majestic, heroic looking Digimon - the lion-man also known as Leomon.

With a single jump, Leomon leapt off of the cliff and landed right in front of the hostile Goblimon. The impact was so severe that the green Digimon was knocked down.

They got up and immediately ran away, knowing full well that they are no match for the much more powerful Leomon.

Patamon looked back at Leomon in awe, slowly realizing that their savior was right in front of them.

"Th-thank you!", Patamon stuttered.

"Call out for me if you're in trouble and I'll be there!", Leomon said while swiftly leaving the area.

"Wait, please wait for me!", Patamon yelled.

The Digimon seemed to be starstruck and ran after Leomon.

Meanwhile, the boy and Greymon were standing in the distance and watching on - Leomon had beaten them to the punch but at least Patamon was safe.

"Wow, what an absolute hero, this Leomon, covering himself with all the glory", the boy said out loud, almost sounding a little jealous.

"I guess we should just be happy that Patamon didn't get hurt, right Greymon?", he followed up.

Greymon let out a roar of affirmation and so the duo continued their way taking the western path that led upwards a cliff.

After walking for a little while, they noticed a large open area that was filled with training machines such as the ones from File City's Green Gym.

"Wow, look at this, we can train you here as well, Greymon!", the boy shouted with excitement.

However, just as he told Greymon to do his first exercise, they spotted Leomon in the distance.

The heroic Digimon was standing by a cliff, gazing into the distance, most likely keeping an eye on this area in case any troublemakers appeared again.

The boy ordered Greymon to walk up to Leomon instead of training so they could talk to him.

Leomon had already sensed their presence and started talking to them.

"So, you have come from another world, haven't you?"

The boy stopped in his tracks and shuddered. "H-how did you know?", he stuttered.

"I heard whispers and rumors of a duo beating up bad guys and recruiting Digimon for File City. Some folks claimed that a Digimon and something called a human are responsible for this. That's how I put two and two together."

"So, does that mean you will join the city and help us?", the boy asked.

"Unfortunately I can't," Leomon responded. "I have a responsibility to patrol this savanna and protect the weaker Digimon from bullies. But that's actually not the main reason I can't join your city right now. I am, in fact, looking for something. Something my ancestors left behind. I have been looking all over but have not found it yet."

"Something you're looking for, huh?", the boy muttered. "Hey, what if I find that certain something and bring it to you? Will you join the city then?"

Leomon looked up and turned around to look at the boy.

The Digimon did not expect the boy to claim something so bold.



"I mean, if you do find it then yes, I will join your city. But please be aware that it's going to be incredibly difficult to find. Like I said, I wasn't even able to get any clue regarding its whereabouts."

"Just let that be my worry from now on", the boy reassured Leomon with a smile on his face.

Leomon, in awe of what had just transpired, turned away again while trying to keep a straight face.

"Go on then, farewell!", he said, clearly emotionally rattled by this encounter.

"You got it, I'll see you down the line!", the boy responded, with an even bigger grin than before. "You heard the man, uhm, lion, uhm, Digimon, Greymon! Let's move!"

Greymon roared happily and the duo made their way downhill, then towards the northern Gear Savanna.

After walking for a little while, the boy noticed a penetrating smell in the air.

It got exponentially stronger the further they walked.

Off in the distance, he spotted something that resembled a junkyard - similar to ones in the human world.

"A junkyard in the digital world? Now I have seen it all!", the boy said, surprised. "Let's go investigate, Greymon. We might find some clues in there. I know the smell is unpleasant but we have to search every nook and cranny of this island in order to save it!"

Greymon wasn't all too pleased but he didn't want to disappoint his partner.

On the way to that junkyard, the duo was intercepted by a group of Shamamon, a Digimon related to Goblimon that they have encountered many times by now.

"You, suspicious, not good, give me your things now!", one of them barked at the boy.

Seemingly unimpressed, Greymon fired off a powerful Spinning Shot hitting all three of the Shamamon directly. "One hit and that's it!", the boy celebrated. "Wow Greymon, you have become so strong that Digimon like this are absolutely no match for you, I am very proud of you".

The praise gave Greymon a huge morale boost which was needed for their next venture.

As they approached the junkyard, the boy noticed a bunch of corrugated iron sheets piled up next to one another forming a path upwards.

"I think this is the way to go!", the boy said.

And thus, they slowly climbed the junkyard while some strange and curious Digimon were lurking in the distance.

"You noticed them too, Greymon?", the boy whispered. "Let's tread carefully."

The Digimon gave off a slightly rotten and sweet scent, definitely not the pleasant type.

However, they didn't seem to be in a fighting mood as they stayed hidden under some rubble, simply observing the heroes' every move.

Their slimy, yellow-green-ish appearance, paired with big round eyes that were stacked on what could only be described as snail antennae, were throwing off the boy a bit, but that wasn't enough to keep the duo from progressing.

Further up, the boy noticed an entrance to a building - if one could even call it that.

He sped up his tempo to get there faster, but predominantly to get out of the smelly Digimon's sight.

Just as the duo had approached the entrance, one of the ominous Digimon jumped out from their hideout and charged at them.

Tongue out, flapping in the wind, the Digimon known as Geremon engaged the heroes in battle.

Its slimy body formed some sort of extremity that would most likely be classified as a hand. And in that hand, something else formed. It had a squishy texture, a disturbing yet familiar smell and it most certainly wasn't something the boy was prepared to face.

Yet there was no other way, he had to fight it head-on.





Geremon used their filth based abilities to form a turd missile and launched it at Greymon.

"Watch out Greymon, please don't get hit by this!", the boy yelled. "Man, this stinks on so many levels!"

But Greymon's movements were so advanced that he had no problem dodging each of the enemy's dirty attacks.

Even on a narrow path like this, the large Digimon moved with ease, firing off a series of powerful Magma Bombs to best the opponent.

Geremon was beaten. The slimy Digimon quite literally fell apart, collapsing on the cold iron sheets. They duo took advantage of the situation and rushed past the defeated Digimon to pass through the entrance from earlier.

Inside, they were met with an even more stinging, penetrating smell.

"Oh dear, I can't take this for much longer, I'm going to have to breathe through my mouth. We are definitely on a trash pile, I didn't know something like this existed in the Digital World", the boy thought to himself. "Let's go Greymon, take a look around and leave here quickly".

Greymon looked like he couldn't agree more with what they boy just told him.

Just as they were about to take their first step inside the junkyard's center, a strange looking Digimon approached them.

"Oh no, not again!", the boy said.

However, this time, the Digimon didn't seem to be hostile. They sure looked unusual, to put it nicely but luckily for the duo, they weren't looking for any trouble.

If anything, the yellow Digimon, that perfectly resembled a turd, was more the curious type.

"Oh wow, I have never seen something like this before, interesting!", the Digimon started rambling.

"Oh my goodness, the poop are moving and talking!", the boy couldn't help but yell in horror of what he had just witnessed.

He had a hard time understanding their words due to their tongue sticking out permanently.

However, he managed to get the gist of what the Digimon was saying.

"Are you talking about me? I'm Sukamon, a Mutant Digimon. Welcome to the dust kingdom, also known as Trash Mountain", the turd-like Digimon continued. "And you are?"

"You are not poop?", the boy responded.

"In a way you are right, because we are made from digital waste," Sukamon said - completely unoffended by the boy's words.

"Should we ask them to come to the city, too? I'm not so sure but we also shouldn't be prejudiced", the boy was whispering to Greymon.

Sukamon, who didn't seem to have overheard that comment, continued: "are you planning to live here?"

"What? I never thought about that", the boy responded, surprised at what he had just heard.

"Well, this is a paradise, however only for the Sukamon tribe. Others can't live here", Sukamon elaborated.

"Then you can't live in other places?", the boy concluded.

Sukamon, seemingly upset by that question, hastily explained: "of course not! What do you think?"

The boy looked like he wanted to give up on asking Sukamon to join the city.

He understood that the Digimon wasn't able to live there.

"Well, although you can't live here, you can at least take a look around", Sukamon followed up, sounding a lot nicer than before.

The boy started to think that this type of Digimon was suffering from mood swings.

"Oh, just to look? Okay, we'll do that!"



"Oh, by the way, don't ever make the king mad. You'll be turned into something miserable by the king's Digivolution technique", Sukamon continued.

Greymon and the boy looked at each other, surprised.  
So the Sukamon tribe was ruled over by an actual king?  
And a seemingly dangerous one if he truly had the ability to use Digivolution on others.

Nevertheless, the duo took it upon themselves, to explore as thoroughly as possible and so they started looking around.  
In one of the corners, the boy spotted something that resembled a rod.  
"Could it be?", the boy yelled with excitement. "Yes, it's a fishing rod, although it looks quite worn out I think it's still functional!"  
The boy was taken back in an instant.  
His mom used to take him out to sport-fish for fun when he was younger.  
But this wasn't the time to reminisce, they had to finish exploring this domain to quickly get out of there.

He picked up the fishing rod and decided to take it with him as he remembered Dragon-Eye Lake in Native Forest had a fishing area.  
The duo walked deeper into the Sukamon's nest and met a bunch of its inhabitants.  
One of them asked for a Digimon Card of the King of Sukamon.  
"Digimon Card? Wait, where have I heard that before?", the boy wondered. "Ah yes, a Demimeramon in Drill Tunnel's volcano asked me for a Meramon card but I actually don't own a single Digimon Card at all. I guess they really are popular around here!"

Then, the Sukamon they met at the entrance talked to them again: "uhm, hey guys, just between the three of us. I'm actually curious about the whatcha-ma-call-it...city? I have decided to come visit from time to time. That way I can still keep on living here."  
"That's a great idea, you're most welcome to visit us in File City", the boy happily confirmed.

After talking to the residents for a bit, they finally reached the throne and sitting on it was a Sukamon of enormous proportions.  
It was towering over all the other Sukamon, wearing something that resembled a crown.  
"No doubt, that's the king right there. Maybe I should invite him to the city?", the boy proposed to Greymon who had a look of doubt on his face.  
Nonetheless, the boy went for it: "we won't know unless we try, right?".  
Greymon nodded with approval and so they talked to the King of Sukamon.

The king let out an annoyed sigh at the sight of the heroic duo.  
"I'm the King of Sukamon! If you have any favors to ask of me, forget about it!"  
This instantly killed the boy's confidence.  
"I guess, we won't be able to ask the king to join the city."

The duo turned right back around heading for the exit.

However, as they walked, the boy noticed a signpost similar to the ones from Green Gym near File City.

"Wait, this is a training machine?", he wondered. "B-but all that's there is a giant pile of poop! How is that considered training?"

He looked visibly upset, as if the sign wanted to fool around with him.  
But as he was about to leave, he decided to read the small print of the description.



It said: "strengthen mind and body by enduring the dirt for one hour resulting in a massive boost in MP, as in Magic Points."

"This is an MP training machine like the waterfall in Green Gym?", the boy yelled. "I guess, we will have to give it a try and see if it works."

As Greymon heard his tamer say those words, he looked anything but eager to plunge into the pile of dirt.

But stranger things have happened so out of pure trust and love for his human partner, Greymon gathered all of his courage and followed the order.

One hour of enduring the stinging stench and oozy textures wrapping themselves around his orange skin.

Definitely an experience nobody would have wanted to have - let alone repeat.

Greymon did it and came crawling out looking as defeated as never before in his Digimon life.

However, just as he wanted to roaringly complain about the displeasure, something happened all of a sudden.

Greymon froze, unable to move while looking down on the ground.

The boy immediately noticed that something was off.

"Greymon? Was it that bad? Are you okay, buddy?"

He was starting to doubt his decision of asking his Digimon partner to train like this.

But before he was able to apologize, Greymon let out a deep growl, followed by a loud screech.

His skin started falling off, first slowly, then rapidly.

"Wait, I have seen this before! Greymon, are you...?"

The boy couldn't even finish his sentence as a bright light emerged from Greymon's body.

The same light the boy had seen before with Agumon. It was the light of Digivolution!

Could it be that the harsh training was the final requirement that triggered Greymon's evolution?

Indeed it was.

And suddenly, standing in front of the hero was a giant, dinosaur-like Digimon.

Purple skin, a face similar to Greymon's, however much more intimidating and covered by what looked like a solid steel mask.

Red hair was waving from the back of the horned helmet and emerging from his back was a set of blue, shredded wings.

But what really took the boy's breath away was the mechanical armor and claw that covered the Digimon's entire left arm and chest.

"G-Greymon, is that still you in there?", the boy stuttered.

He wasn't sure if he should be happy that his Digimon partner had evolved even further because he looked so much more intimidating now.

The new Digimon's name was Metalgreymon and he let out a dominating, resounding roar.

The boy stepped back at first, but then seemed to get a hold of himself.

The roar had a similar character than Greymon's, in fact it sounded just like his, but with more force.

"So, you're still in there, buddy!", the boy said to his new, giant Digimon partner.

Metalgreymon looked down at him and growled with approval.

This was still his Digimon partner, just more powerful and larger than ever before.

Metalgreymon, a powerful android Digimon, the evolved form of Greymon, was known for its devastating battling power and distinctive fighting style.

Its use of the finishing maneuver known as Giga Destroyer pulverized its opponents at the blink of an



eye.

A set of homing missiles emerging from the Digimon's metal plated chest.

This was now the boy's partner.

It took him a bit of getting used to the sheer sight but over time he managed to condone the big size of his buddy Digimon.

After all, they were still a team with a common goal and now, more than ever, they had the best chances at succeeding.

The boy was curious.

"I wonder how Metalgreymon fairs in battle. I also would like to see his moveset, so let's punish some of these Shamamon that have intercepted us earlier!"

As soon as the duo descended from Trash Mountain, they charged at another trio of Shamamon who were plotting nasty things in a corner.

Their scrappy lot was most definitely not pleased to see a giant mechanical reptile-Digimon run at them at full speed.

Metalgreymon, however, had to deal with a slight disadvantage. His specialty has now changed to mechanical attacks, and the duo hadn't encountered a single Digimon using these types of moves before.

Therefore, the only move that Metalgreymon was able to use at the time was an area-of-effect maneuver also known as Metal Splinter.

The Digimon summoned a bunch of metal scraps and proceeded to spread them around the battlefield resulting in low damage dealt to the opponents.

The Shamamon, while shaken at first, got their act together and attacked in unison, using a move known as Megaton Punch from different angles.

The boy was worried temporarily due to Metalgreymon's insufficient attack power but these worries subsided instantly when he watched his partner tank the hits perfectly, taking almost no damage at all.

"Wow, your defense is rock-solid, Metalgreymon!", the boy yelled. "But let's try to get you to learn some new techniques so we can speed up future battles, what do you think?"

Metalgreymon looked back at his tamer and nodded slightly.

"Focus on their attacks and see what you can learn from that!", the boy commanded.

Metalgreymon closed his eyes for a brief moment, trying to feel the trembles caused by the Shamamon's movements.

Just as the trio was about to attack again, Metalgreymon opened his eyes and perfectly dodged all three of their attacks.

He continued this strategy until he was ready to unleash the devastating Giga Destroyer.

The air around them became electric and the ground was shaking immensely as Metalgreymon's chest compartment opened up, firing off the fearsome missiles that laid waste to the Shamamon trio in an instant.

A decisive victory and with a fair reward no less.

Metalgreymon managed to master the move Megaton Punch that he had studied during this battle.

A most effective way of defeating his opponents using his massive metal claw.

"Awesome, buddy, now we are truly unstoppable!", the boy praised his partner.

While the duo was celebrating their victory, darkness covered the lands and night had fallen.

It was time for Metalgreymon to eat his dinner and get some much deserved rest.

What an eventful day, and what an overwhelming Digivolution.



The boy was excited to continue exploring Gear Savanna the next morning.

---

## **Chapter Eight**

A restless night passed.

The boy had trouble sleeping.

Maybe it was the fact that he still hasn't gotten used to his Digimon partner's new appearance.

However, deep inside he knew that this giant android Digimon was still the jolly and friendly Agumon inside.

His partner who would never leave his side and with whom he'd always fight together, no matter what. Yes, that's Metalgreymon.

Together they would overcome any challenges.

And so, after a light breakfast for Metalgreymon, the duo continued searching Gear Savanna for more possible city recruits.

The boy remembered seeing this enormous, city-like construction from afar, back when they first entered this area. Now that they travelled deeper into the lands, they have gotten quite close to it.

"Doesn't this look impressive, buddy?", the boy gaped.

Metalgreymon stared at the wide, metal walls, almost as if something was drawing him to it. He had a certain interest in this particular structure, however as they walked along the walls, they noticed that there was no way of getting inside.

The outer walls were too high to climb and what appeared to be the only entrance to this mysterious area, was a large iron door that wouldn't open, no matter how hard they pushed.

"I guess we have to find another way in! But let's leave that for another day, shall we?", the boy suggested.

Metalgreymon, still staring at the structure, slowly moved along with his partner, however still gazing back at it - the view was too enticing.

The duo walked south and arrived in an open plain area.

Nobody was around, at least that's what they thought - but off in the distance, hiding beside a rock, was a pink, small creature.

Their small beak and wings suggested that this was a bird-type Digimon.

"Biyomon! I know this one!", the boy yelled as he and Metalgreymon approached the lonesome Digimon.

Biyomon didn't quite look happy to see the duo run towards them and so it huddled up against that rock, hoping they wouldn't spot the little critter.

But it was too late, the boy, backed by the giant Metalgreymon, had already made it to Biyomon.

What an intimidating sight it must have been for the small, pink bird Digimon.

"H-hey!", the boy opened.

He tried to ask Biyomon to join the city but before he could even say anything, Biyomon hightailed out of there.

"No way!", the small Digimon said and fled the scene.



"What?", the boy said, visibly confused. "I just wanted to ask them nicely if they would like to join the city. I guess the sheer sight of Metalgreymon has scared them off. I have to consider this for future encounters, I don't want every single one of them to end up in a battle. Okay buddy, let's try this one more time, but nice and slow, got it?"

Metalgreymon looked at the boy confused, as if he was implying that it was his fault that the Digimon ran away.

The duo followed Biyomon's trail and tracked them down not too far from where they first met. However, this time they made sure to approach the Digimon cautiously to not send any wrong signals.

"Hey little guy, we just want to ask you something!", the boy carefully said.

"No way, I'm outta here!", Biyomon instantly responded while taking to their heels.

"Dammit, this way, we'll only repeat ourselves. What should we do, Metalgreymon?", the boy worried.

After thinking for a short while, he yelled: "I got it! We have to come up with a ruse and make Biyomon come to us!"

Metalgreymon looked at his partner and carefully listened.

"Look, I will stay here and you will go ahead and approach Biyomon like we did before. If everything goes according to plan, they should try to run away again, however this time, I will be waiting right here. If we're lucky, they are going to run right into my arms. Got it, buddy?"

Metalgreymon nodded and was raring to go.

And so their plan began.

As Metalgreymon approached Biyomon, the bird Digimon was already starting to move, only thinking about getting away from the enormous Digimon that was chasing them.

The boy however, was standing in the same spot as before, not moving an inch.

This proved to be the right call as Biyomon came running towards him with Metalgreymon being on their tail.

This way, Biyomon was trapped and after running away for so long, they were too exhausted to keep escaping. Therefore, they sat down, looking up at the duo with worried eyes.

"Yes, our ruse worked, Metalgreymon. Great job!", the boy celebrated.

He knew he had to choose his next words wisely so he wouldn't scare off the fragile Digimon once more.

"Are you the infamous Digimon kidnappers?", Biyomon asked them.

"The what now?", the boy responded, looking absolutely puzzled. "I think you have the wrong idea"

The boy tried to explain everything and convinced Biyomon to listen to him.

"Oh, so that's how it is. Okay, I will join this city of yours, why didn't you say so sooner?", Biyomon brazenly said.

The boy had a noticeable vein forming on his forehead while clenching his fists.

"It's not like I opened the conversation with exactly that", he was thinking to himself.

It was better he kept it to himself to not further intimidate Biyomon.

And so, they gained yet another citizen for File City, although it was an odd one.

They decided to keep going west, alongside the enormous iron walls, and hopping around in circles they saw a familiar Digimon.

Patamon!

"Hey, you're that Digimon from before, that was chased by that Goblimon, right?", the boy opened.

Patamon didn't look pleased one bit, hearing what the boy just said.





“What? Me? chased by an ugly, pimply gremlin like that? Who do you think you are making assumptions like that? That was obviously a different Patamon.”, the small but feisty Digimon responded in a not so nice tone.

“I’ll kick your butt!”, they followed up.

And without the slightest hesitation, Patamon fired off a bunch of attacks at Metalgreymon. The small Digimon didn’t seem to care that their opponent was at least ten times their size. Metalgreymon managed to tank a few Spinning Shots as well as Wind Cutters from Patamon before clocking them with a round of Megaton Punches.

Patamon went down quite fast, but got up almost instantly.

“Hehe, that was fun, how about we do it again, right now?”, Patamon barked at the duo, still panting from their battle.

“Look at the crazed look in their eyes, Metalgreymon. I think they are serious”, the boy consulted his partner. “Okay, let’s battle again. Let’s see if we can calm them down.”

The second time went by even faster than the first battle.

Patamon was seemingly overwhelmed by Metalgreymon’s massive attack power.

However, the boy seemed to be impressed by their sheer fighting spirit.

“We could really use a brave Digimon like you for our city!”, the boy praised Patamon.

But Patamon simply ignored his words and yelled: “come on, please fight me again, please one more time, okay?”

The boy was about to roll his eyes but didn’t want to pass up the chance of recruiting yet another Digimon, so he granted Patamon their wish.

A third battle went down and this time, Patamon tried to change their attacking pattern and strategy which ultimately would prove ineffective.

The difference in power was simply too big and so Patamon went down a third time, ultimately giving up.

Patamon started throwing a temper tantrum.

“Argh, dammit, why can’t I win?”

“Why so stubborn? What’s making you fight all the time?”, the boy asked, worrying about the little creature.

“It’s because I got nothing else. Or tell me, what else should I be doing if not to fight?”, Patamon asked.

“I actually do have a suggestion for you”, the boy responded. “How about you join the city? We have an arena over there, in case you want to fight again, but regarding your main activities there, how about opening some sort of shop and helping us rebuild the city with everyone?”

Patamon’s eyes started glowing as a warm breeze came through from the nearby sea.

“A new beginning for me?”, Patamon asked, astonished by the boy’s suggestion. “Count me in!”

The duo looked on as Patamon raced towards File City.

“I guess sometimes you just gotta let out all your anger in a battle, or three”, the boy said jokingly. Metalgreymon let out a roar of victory and set his sights on the next target.

The heroes walked further west, led by the sea breeze they felt earlier.

By a tree, there was a Digimon, patrolling, almost looking full of themselves.

“This one’s probably a showoff, watch out buddy”, the boy suspected.

They approached the Digimon trying to start a conversation.

Their pointy, red ears and multiple tails signaled danger, however the boy seemed to be too naive in



this moment.

The small Digimon seemed to be ignoring the two and kept walking around in circles.

And that's when the boy lost his patience, walked up to them and tried to tap their body to get their attention.

That's when it happened, the boy and Metalgreymon were knocked back instantly.

They were electrocuted out of nowhere.

"Ha, anyone who gets too close to me lives dangerously!", the Digimon boasted in a provocative tone.

"Ouch, that really hurt. Are you okay Metalgreymon?", the boy asked his partner.

Metalgreymon seemed to be okay, however he was quite impressed by the attack power of such a small Digimon.

"Let's try talking to them again, shall we?", the boy suggested. He was confident that there had to be a way to get through to them.

And so, they tried again.

A loud sizzling noise echoed. "Double ouch!", the boy yelled, falling flat on his face.

The smug Digimon had done it again. No remorse whatsoever.

"Don't you like to be here?", they impishly asked the boy.

The boy was about to lose his composure but he looked back at Metalgreymon who stayed impressively calm, despite being electrocuted twice in a row.

"What do you think, buddy? Should we prove our toughness by forcing a third electrical shock?", the boy suggested.

This seemed to be exactly what Metalgreymon was thinking as he nodded heavily at the boy.

"Okay, I knew you were brave but this really takes some courage!", he praised his partner. "But I'll be with you all the way. Let's do this together!"

And so, the duo walked up to the Digimon confidently and tried to touch them again.

The mammal-like Digimon noticed their change in demeanor and decided to test the duo's guts by increasing the voltage.

"Let's see what you got then, you strangers!", they said with fire in their eyes.

The duo's strategy seemed to work and the smugness turned into instant respect.

A loud "boom" echoed with flashing lights.

Both the boy and his partner took a massive electrical shock, got knocked down once more, but got up just a fast, proving their undying determination.

"Wow, it really takes some guts to willingly touch me and get electrocuted. I am impressed! You earned my attention, now say what you want to say, I'm listening! I'm Elecmon by the way", the Digimon explained.

"I'm a human from another world and this is my partner Metalgreymon! Say, would you also consider using your electricity for the city?", the boy asked.

"The city? you mean the old place?", Elecmon responded. They seemed as if they knew about File City already. "Okay, you got it, I am convinced! See you in the city!"

And thus, Elecmon ran off towards the city with the boy and Metalgreymon looking on. What a streak they were on!

Before they continued their way south to explore the remaining parts of Gear Savanna, the boy decided to take a break and tend to Metalgreymon's minor wounds.

An electric shock is not to be underestimated, or rather three, even if they come from a small creature such as Elecmon. The boy knew that and was quite proud of his partner but so was Metalgreymon -



impressed as ever that his human partner didn't back down one bit and took just as much of the damage as he did.

After their small break, they searched for more possible recruits by the beach.

The boy couldn't help but stop and gaze in amazement of the endless sea before him.

He was instantly taken back to when he would go to the local beach with his mother. He would take his V-Pet with him, even to the beach, that's what a true Digimon tamer was supposed to do after all, right?

The trip down memory lane was cut short however as Metalgreymon let out a deep growl.

"What's the matter buddy?", the boy wondered. "Oh, you have discovered something?"

Metalgreymon nodded, running ahead passing a narrow bottleneck across a cliff.

Another gentle sea breeze came through and the boy stood in awe of what he spotted in front of him.

A building, a shop in fact.

But what kind of shop?

He was about to find out as he got closer.

The building itself - if you can even call it that - looked rather rundown. Like a makeshift cabin made from cardboard and stacked iron sheets.

It said "Card Shop" on a panel.

"Card Shop?", the boy yelled. "Wait, so this is where I can get these popular Digimon cards from. We finally found it, buddy!"

To his right, he spotted a Digimon that looked like an old geezer, small and fragile, yet quick-witted as he immediately recognized the duo as potential customers.

"Recycled items, the best recycled items on File Island, come get 'em now!", he yelled in a creaky voice.

"Recycled items?", the boy asked. "What do you mean by that?"

"These are rare goods that can only be bought here. Each item is one of a kind special", the shop owner explained.

"That sounds nice and all, but where do you obtain such items in the first place?", the boy asked mistrustfully.

"Uhm, company secret!", the manager responded in a fuss, quickly trying to switch topics. "How dare you ask something like that! Now, are you buying or not? I also have regular items in stock if that's what you are looking for."

The boy squinted and stopped for a second, but then decided to take a look at the regular items they were selling.

He took the opportunity to stock up on some healing items as well as a few pieces of Giant Meat - despite the high price.

He thanked the manager and turned his attention to the other manager that was standing behind a counter to his left.

The boy spotted an impressively large glass showcase filled to the brim with Digimon cards.

One more captivating than the other.

Any collector's dream all in one place.

"Wow, this looks quite impressive", he opened.

The card manager, who looked like a female counterpart to the other shop owner, grunted.

"So you like my cards? How about it then?"



The boy looked at her and thought to himself: "wow, these guys surely don't beat around the bush, getting right to it. I guess that's how they best make a profit here in the Digital World."

"Digimon cards are the latest craze, everyone is collecting them!", she continued. "Here, to start your collection I'm giving you a very special card for free!"

The manager handed the boy a card.

Not even looking at the card yet, he took a bow and thanked her for the gift.

Only then did he notice what was depicted on the card.

He couldn't believe his own eyes. How was this possible?

"I-it's a card of...Me?", he yelled in disbelief. "How?"

The card manager giggled. "Hehe, company secret!"

"Of course", the boy was thinking, not even bothering to say it out loud.

He then proceeded to take a closer look at the cards in the showcase.

"Ah, finally hehe", the manager whispered.

The boy was quite irritated by their antics but tried to keep his composure.

"We usually sell cards in packs of three. There's no telling in advance what's inside, hehe", she continued. "In fact, we also sell single cards - the selection changes every day, but keep in mind, we are only open from the 1st to the 15th of the year."

The boy was trying to store that information in the back of his brain while looking at the cards of the day.

Ultimately, he decided to buy some lower priced cards such as Toyagumon, Tankmon, Leomon and Greymon.

He was particularly happy to see a Greymon card in the selection.

Next, he went for a rare card which was quite expensive but he had a feeling that these cards would become useful later on.

"Phoenixmon, huh?", the boy muttered. "I have never seen a Digimon like this before, but it sure looks majestic. I'll have this one as well, please!"

"My, my, with the greatest of pleasure!", the manager delightfully confirmed.

"And finally, I would like to purchase a few packs of three, please.", the boy continued.

"Quite the impressive haul for a first-time customer. Thank you very much for your business, I hope to see you again soon hehe", the card manager followed up.

The boy thanked her and turned around only to see Metalgreymon - who was bored out of his mind - play with some rocks in the back.

When he finally saw the boy return to him, he would jump from joy.

"Sorry for making you wait for so long", the boy apologized. "I'm an avid collector but back at home I could never quite afford all of the merchandise. All I had was my V-Pet but at least that's what got me here so I could meet you, right?"

The innocent smile on the boy's face would let Metalgreymon forget all about the boredom he just had to endure.

And so, the duo continued their way through the savanna.

"Not much left to do here from what it seems", the boy realized. "I saw a path leading north-east near Trash Mountain, shall we head there, buddy?"

Greymon growled eagerly and so it was time to say goodbye to Gear Savanna.



---

## Chapter Nine

It was late in the afternoon - the sun was already barely visible on the horizon. The air felt heavy but perhaps that was the smell coming from Trash Mountain.

The two heroes crossed many miles through Gear Savanna to make it to the northeastern part.

A pathway there led to a new area, however it was patrolled by a Digimon.

Shimaunimon, a Digimon that resembled a zebra.

At second glance, the Digimon wasn't necessarily patrolling but rather dashing back and forth for fun.

Still, the duo didn't want to trigger unnecessary battles and so they snuck past the Digimon and found themselves in a new region.

The air became even thicker and the sound of insects were clearly audible.

It was hard to take steps due to the muddy, uneven ground giving in beneath their feet.

This area could only be described as a large swamp and it wasn't necessarily a place the duo felt comfortable in - especially Metalgreymon who had a look of displeasure on his face.

"I know this place is disgusting, but let's just try and pass through here quickly", the boy comforted his partner. "I doubt there are many Digimon here that we could invite to the city anyway."

As they ventured through the swamp, they noticed a lot of insect Digimon around.

They sounded like mosquitoes but looked more like dragonflies.

"I have seen these guys in Tropical Jungle before!", the boy noticed. "Yanmamon! Let's avoid any battles, they are pesky ones, especially in such large numbers."

Metalgreymon nodded in agreement. He looked happy to just move on and get out of this place real soon.

After dodging a few aggressively buzzing Yanmamon on the way, the duo made it deeper into the swampy area.

That's when they spotted an odd looking Digimon.

Small, blue-skinned, a fin on its tail and big, googly eyes staring them down. It resembled a tadpole of sorts.

"Oh hello!", the boy said with a friendly voice.

This Digimon didn't look hostile or dangerous in the slightest, so he thought about inviting them to the city.

But before he could even elaborate any further, he was bombarded with a verbal onslaught of insults by the round little creature.

"Bird brain, numbskull, dimwit, chowderhead, dumb dumb, eau de geek!"

The boy was startled. He couldn't believe what he just heard. "What did you say?", he confronted the bold Digimon.

For some reason, being bombarded with insults like this reminded him of an unpleasant encounter with a big bully back in the human world.

His usually composed demeanor changed in an instant and the boy's facial expression turned from shocked to enraged.

"Oh this makes me mad!", he yelled. "Metalgreymon, teach this one a lesson, now!"

Metalgreymon hesitated. This was not the usual note his tamer would strike.

But despite the hesitation, he didn't want to disappoint and further anger his partner, so Metalgreymon obliged.



A single Megaton Punch was enough to knock down the mischievous Digimon, also known as Otamamon.

The boy noticed that Metalgreymon was holding back his power but in the end this proved to be the right call.

As he saw the small Digimon lay flat on their back, the boy snapped out of it.

His anger quickly subsided and he immediately felt bad.

For Otamamon, but also for Metalgreymon.

“Oh no, what have I done? I am sorry, buddy. I didn’t want to put you in a tough spot like this!”, the boy apologized.

He then went on explaining what had happened with him.

“When I was younger I was bullied frequently by this bigger kid who repeatedly stole my lunch box and the few Digimon toys that I owned. I was too scared to fight back or tell anyone. I didn’t want to get mocked by others either. But that’s exactly the position I put you in right now. I made you fight the smaller Digimon for my own selfish reasons. I’m sure Otamamon had their reasons for insulting me. Maybe they were scared too and tried to defend themselves like this. Let me walk up to them and apologize for my actions.”

Just as he approached Otamamon, the tadpole-like Digimon got up swiftly and fled in terror yelling: “they aren’t nice!”

It was as if it was calling for help to get revenge.

“Oh no”, the boy worried. “I hope we didn’t trigger a chain reaction of battles.”

And before he could even form another thought, a small army of green, bipedal frog-like Digimon appeared out of nowhere.

The duo was quickly surrounded by them.

They had menacing, large eyes and something that looked like a corset was wrapped around their necks.

Certainly one of the stranger Digimon the duo has encountered.

“Geko, my master is calling me, *geko*”, one of the creatures grunted. “Follow us”.

The boy was thinking for a second.

Should he fight them all at once? Metalgreymon might have been strong enough to handle them all but what if there were more of them hiding nearby?

Instead, he decided to follow them quietly as asked.

Maybe they could strike a deal with that master they mentioned.

Passing through a small area with lots of musical equipment, loudspeakers and even a stage for musical performances, the lot arrived at a building called the Volume Villa.

“Inside, please, *geko*”, one of the Digimon called Gekomon commanded.

The interior of Volume Villa was equipped with even more loudspeaker technology.

Some of them looked awfully familiar to things and brands the boy knew from the human world.

While looking around in amazement, he stopped when he spotted the giant creature sitting on a large cushion in the center of the room.

Two cornets topping his shoulders, bright red skin, webbing on hands and feet, a strikingly round belly and a leaf-like coronal adorning the neck of this huge, cross-eyed Digimon, also known as Shogunekomon.

The master, as the Gekomon subjects call him, laughed loudly at the sight of the duo.





"Hahaha, *geko*! A human boy and his Digimon partner, Metalgreymon, right? Thanks for coming to Volume Villa!"

The boy looked as surprised as ever.

He was thinking he would be imprisoned or sentenced to immediate punishment for beating up one of their own, Otamamon.

To make sure this wouldn't happen afterwards, the boy led with a prompt apology.

"I'm sorry for what we did to Otamamon!"

Shogungekomon sized them up and simply responded with a: "never mind."

"Huh?", the boy followed up.

Shogungekomon laughed again.

"I'm grateful. I heard that you've been working hard to save this island. I've been wanting to help you. Have you been to Misty Trees just north of here?", he asked.

"Not yet", the boy responded.

"It's always foggy there", Shogungekomon explained. "It'll probably be hard for you to get around. But you should meet Cherrymon, who is the forest chief."

"Cherrymon?", the boy asked. "I've never heard of such a Digimon."

Shogungekomon continued: "Cherrymon makes the fog in Misty Trees. He created it to protect the forest from danger."

"But that's a problem for us", the boy concluded.

Shogungekomon slapped his belly, laughing again. "I think Cherrymon knows something about the cause of the island's trouble. It's worth going through the fog to see him."

The boy looked at the large Digimon with slight doubt. "That is, if we can do something about the fog."

"The only one who can get rid of the fog is Cherrymon", Shogungekomon explained. "But here's a way to get through. I'll put a spell on you, *geko*!"

"W-Wait!", the boy responded anxiously. "What's going to happen to me?"

Shogungekomon laughed once more. "You'll be able to see the road even in the fog. Okay then, I'll start. Just stand there, don't move!"

The huge Digimon pulled out a hand fan and began moving oddly for just a few seconds...

"Good, that's perfect. Now, go to Misty Trees", he said, waving the duo goodbye.

The boy almost lost his balance. "Oh, that's it? Alright, I guess I'll see you soon!"

As the duo turned around to leave for Misty Trees, some of the Gekomon stopped them.

It looked like they wanted to talk to them, first.

One of them bashfully said: "*geko*, I have a request. Would you please hear me out?"

The boy stopped, looked at the Digimon and saw the look of determination in their eyes - despite their shy appearance.

"Yes, of course, I'm all ears!"

Gekomon sighed in relief. "I would like to move to the city's arena. We're a bunch of rednecks that are always made fun of by other Digimon. But we are prideful, too! In the city, I want to prove our worth!"

The boy smiled.

"Sure, no problem, you are welcome to visit us at the arena!"

Gekomon looked relieved, thanked the boy and hopped away.

Another Gekomon waved the duo over to them. "Hey, you guys, come here real quick!"

The boy was interested in what this critter had to say, so he walked over.



“Did you know that the master is a big collector?”, Gekomon explained. “He used to collect all sorts of items in the past, but now he is specializing in Digimon Cards. Do you also collect them? If you give him a card, he will award you with bonus points. The rarer the card, the more points you get. And guess what. In exchange for a certain amount of points, the master will trade you one of his prized possessions, doesn’t that sound exciting, *geko*?”

The boy listened with great interest.

He had a feeling that the cards would come in handy at some point, but he didn’t expect this moment to arrive so soon.

Either way, he thanked Gekomon for the useful information and walked right up to Shogungekomon who overheard their conversation just now.

With a big smile on his face, the master said: “hehe, *geko*, are you here for bonus points? Show me your cards!”

And so the trading began.

Rare cards were awarded with a large amount of points, common cards with a smaller amount.

After a little while, the boy had gathered quite some bonus points, so he asked Shogungekomon to show him his item collection.

One item in particular stood out from all the others right away.

It was a brand new, sturdy looking fishing rod.

“Oh, I see you are interested in the Amazing Rod?” ,Shogungekomon noticed. “Well, then here you go!”

He handed over the item, explaining that it was a special item that’s quite rare.

The boy’s fishing skill would vastly improve with this.

He barely listened as he was already dreaming about fishing again. He hadn’t done it in years and was looking forward to finally holding a fishing rod again.

With his remaining bonus credit, he ordered a few healing items as well as a Speed Chip.

This item would permanently increase Metalgreymon’s speed which would ultimately help him dodge attacks better and attack more frequently himself.

The boy knew that this kind of item was quite rare. He only ever received them after fighting strong Digimon who happened to drop some after being defeated.

Now, that all of his bonus points were used up, the boy was raring to go and explore this mysterious foggy forest known as Misty Trees.

However, Shogungekomon noticed that it was already night time and suggested the duo stayed overnight.

After everything that happened, the boy didn’t even notice that it had turned completely dark outside.

A delicious meal and a bathroom break later, the duo settled down on a bunch of pillows provided by the villa’s residents and shortly after, they fell asleep, wrapping up another exciting, eventful day.

Dawn was breaking, warm sunrays were hitting the swamp as the buzzing from Yanmamon could be heard all around.

The boy and his partner woke up and got ready for their next target, Misty Trees.

Would they find their way through the fog and meet Cherrymon as mentioned by Shogungekomon?

The only way to find out was to head there and do their best.

The duo said goodbye to the residents of Volume Villa and made their way to the northern part of Geko Swamp.



Dense fog was already filling the air, so the boy was alerting Metalgreymon to be prepared for anything.

And here they were, Misty Trees, almost like a magical forest out of a fairytale the boy thought. No way of spotting anything in the distance as the fog covered everything in the woods. But the boy remembered that this was done on purpose by Cherrymon to scare off bad guys and to protect the inhabitants of this area.

The current state of File Island must have been really bad, the boy was guessing.

Either way, the heroes had a clear goal in mind for now and that was to find Cherrymon who lived deep in the forest.

Right after taking a few steps forward, a hostile Digimon came charging at the boy. Metalgreymon intercepted the attacker and a battle was imminent.

“Ogremon?”, the boy yelled, surprised by the Digimon’s appearance. “No, that’s a different species. Although it almost looks like Ogremon!”

In fact, the attacking Digimon was Fugamon, a brown-orange colored bipedal Digimon from the Ogremon family.

“Intruder, get out of here!”, the scrappy Digimon grunted.

Metalgreymon made sure to protect his partner to the best of his abilities, by smartly blocking any incoming attacks.

This was no small feat - due to the density of the fog, Metalgreymon’s time to react was very limited, so he had to pay extra attention to any movements from the opponent.

He had to take a few Wind Cutter attacks but was mostly fine throughout the battle.

A bunch of Megaton Punches later, Fugamon was defeated. The attacker got up and scrambled immediately.

“Thank you, buddy, you did really well!”, the boy praised his partner. “Now then, let’s continue our search!”

They spotted some sort of cliff with a rocky wall leading there.

To not get lost, the boy decided to walk along this wall in order to progress.

And so, they arrived at a more open area with less trees around.

The fog was less dense here as well, so it was easier to take a look around.

At first, the boy didn’t see anything of interest but at a second glance, he spotted some slight movement behind a boulder.

“Wait, somebody is there. Are they hiding?”, he wondered.

Indeed, a Digimon seemed to be hiding near the rocks, hoping to not get discovered by anyone.

The boy slowly walked up to the Digimon, trying to show his good intentions.

The small Digimon looked like it was covered in silver and blue fur but from the looks of it, the fur was not attached to the Digimon’s skin.

It looked more like it was a hood that they were wearing to cover up that yellow, reptile-like appearance underneath.

“Leave me alone!”, the frightened Digimon demanded.

“Don’t worry, we don’t mean any harm!”, the boy tried to explain.

But the scared Digimon, also known as Gabumon, looked back at Metalgreymon and panicked.

They started attacking the boy and that’s when Metalgreymon had to step in.

They both had a feeling that Gabumon wasn’t really intending to hurt them.

They just wanted to bring themselves to safety.



And so, Metalgreymon carefully attacked them so he wouldn't cause any severe injuries. Just to calm them down a bit.

This seemed to have worked since Gabumon noticed the duo's intentions judging from Metalgreymon's attack patterns.

At that point, however, the battle was already over. Gabumon didn't seem to have much energy left and collapsed in front of the boy.

Concerned for the small Digimon's wellbeing, the boy asked Metalgreymon to find him some dry branches so he could start a bonfire, hoping to nurse Gabumon back to full health.

They sat down and waited for Gabumon to wake up as the warmth of the fire gently stroked the passed out Digimon's face.

A little while later, Gabumon slowly opened their eyes, spotting the boy and Metalgreymon who were still sitting there all worried.

Gabumon wanted to get up and flee, but their legs gave out.

The poor Digimon simply wasn't fully recovered yet.

"Please calm down, we really don't mean any harm!", the boy explained. "I noticed you were cowering in that corner so I wanted to help you, that's really all there is to it!"

Gabumon looked confused and responded: "I don't wanna fight!"

"Why don't you run away from fights, then?", the boy asked.

However, just after saying the words he realized that the question was rather unfair towards Gabumon who clearly had run away many times before.

"Oh, this is bad!", Gabumon cried.

"Hey, I have an idea! If you don't want to fight, why don't you move to File City? It's peaceful there.

Much better than constantly running away, right?", the boy suggested.

Gabumon's eyes lit up.

For the first time, since meeting the two, the Digimon's face wasn't shrouded in fear.

"The city?", Gabumon repeated. "Oh, yes I will go there. Thank you so much!"

The duo rested with Gabumon for a little while longer and then it was time for them to leave.

Gabumon left Misty Trees through the southern exit, while the duo headed east, deeper into the foggy woods.

They waved goodbye as they parted ways.

After walking through the forest for a while, the boy started recognizing the places they had been to before.

That way, he was able to figure out which way to go.

It was also helpful that some Digimon seemed to be patrolling in the same areas.

The ground-shaking thud from Morishellmon's movements, or the grunting and growling from Fugamon.

All of this helped the duo find their way through this maze-like forest.

"Look, Metalgreymon, we haven't been to this place before!", the boy pointed out. "The trees here look a little different, especially that strange one over there, don't you think?"

Metalgreymon nodded and was already walking towards that unusual looking tree.

They both walked closer and inspected this giant tree.

It had impressively long branches and some of its roots were not stuck underground, instead it looked like the roots were used to balance out the tree on the surface - almost like legs.

All of a sudden, the tree started moving.

The boy jumped back. He was shaking.



"D-did you see that, Metalgreymon?", he asked.  
His partner was just as surprised, staring back at the tree.

And then, out of nowhere, a pair of big, white eyes emerged from the bark of the tree, staring the heroes down.

An eerily grinning mouth was visible underneath those eyes.

"Stuff of nightmares", the boy whispered, frozen in fear. "Is this Cherrymon?"

Indeed, the creepy looking tree was in fact the Digimon they had been looking for.

He opened by saying: "welcome young man."

"You're Cherrymon, right?", the boy asked after regaining his composure a little bit.

"What do you want with an old man like me?", Cherrymon inquired.

"First, clear the fog", the boy followed up very demandingly.

"So that's it, I see", Cherrymon responded.

"Can't you do it?", the hero asked.

Cherrymon examined the boy and his Digimon partner with his unaligned, big eyes.

"First, listen to what I have to say. Now...where should I begin?"

The boy realized that Cherrymon might possibly know a lot about the island's past and maybe even about the tragedy that has occurred there.

He continued by asking Cherrymon to tell him about the emergency on the island.

"I see, I see, the emergency", Cherrymon responded. "This island began to change eighty years ago after the land changes happened. The northeastern parts of the island and a large mountain in the center suddenly appeared eighty years ago. Since then, Digimon started to move away. The species separated. And each species started to speak their own tongue. They forgot the language they used in the city. In the end, File City lost most of its population of Digimon. Then Digimon began to lose their memory! The island's history, their past, their senses...getting worse day by day. I have something important to tell you, but I can't remember it, either. However, all will come together in the end. Someone compels it to be so! In time, the Digimon will come to think of the emergency as normal. The only thing that can stop this is you and the power of File City to unify Digimon! Gather Digimon in the city and create a miracle. It will definitely happen! Well, I got all worked up. Phew, I've said it all. Now, let's get rid of the fog", Cherrymon said and followed this up with a finger snap, or rather a branch snap?

Either way, the immense density of the fog almost instantly disappeared.

He then continued explaining: "the reason for the forest fog was to be able to speak to you. Oh, one more thing...there are others in the forest who know about the past. Go deep into the forest to find them, if you can."

And with that, Cherrymon moved aside, opening the path that led even deeper into the forest.

"I understand more about the island's past now, thanks to you, Cherrymon", the boy said. "But the part about moving landmass and the new areas that appeared eighty years ago strikes me as suspicious. Who or what was responsible for that? Maybe somebody forcefully made it happen to conceal something? I guess we will have to keep searching in order to learn about what really happened back then."

Thanks to the lower fog density, the boy was actually able to see farther ahead now.

He spotted some very odd looking buildings. They looked unlike anything he had seen in the Digital World so far.



Before going there, he thanked Cherrymon for the insights - definitely a lot of new information for the heroes to digest.

Cherrymon laughed: "haha, be careful young man. But I'm sure you will be able to save everyone! Oh and by the way, if you need me to train your Digimon partner, I can teach him the wisdom of the forest, ha ha ha!"

"I might just take you up on that offer", the boy responded.

With that, a few hours passed as Metalgreymon's IQ was intensively trained by the wise Cherrymon. In the process, he learned a useful new technique that would prove to be very powerful in future battles.

A much more viable mechanical move than Metal Splinter.

The devastating All Range Beam was mastered by Metalgreymon.

With this technique, fights would become much easier, especially due to its wide area of effect. The only thing the boy had to pay attention to however, was the MP cost of this move but with plenty of healing items equipped, this wouldn't become too much of an issue.

And so the duo ventured deeper into the forest and what they eventually found was quite mind blowing, at least for the boy.

They arrived at what could only be described as a town made entirely from toys and blocks.

The buildings, the streets, the town walls, everything looked like it belonged to a kid's toy collection. But who lived in a place like this?

The answer to this would prove to be more difficult to get than expected.

In fact, there was nobody on the streets, not a single soul.

This playful, inviting looking town was in fact facing a sad reality but there had to be a reason for this tragic state it was in.

Unfortunately, it wouldn't be on that day the boy discovered the true fate of this place known as Toy Town.

Nonetheless, the duo explored for a little while, entering a few of the accessible buildings to find any residents or clues.

A building to their left looked like a giant stuffed animal and was indeed labeled the Costume House. Just as the name suggested, it was filled to the brim with all sorts of plush toys, costumes and puppets.

One of these plush toys especially stood out from all the others. It was a yellow teddy bear plush sitting on a chair.

Its eyes looked like they were watching the boy and his Digimon partner but on a closer look, the boy noticed that it wasn't alive at all. It was in fact a costume with a zipper on its back.

"Hey, take a look at this, Metalgreymon, it has a zipper!", the boy pointed out after accidentally knocking over the costume. "It has this magic appeal to it as if it's drawing me towards it. Hey buddy, do you wanna try and get in, see if it fits?"

Metalgreymon looked perplexed upon hearing his partner's suggestion.

It seemed as if some magic power forced him to say the words.

However, he didn't want to disobey his tamer and therefore he tried wearing the yellow bear costume.

"Ah, no way, it's way too small for your large body", the boy was quick to point out. "Maybe if you had flexible limbs you might fit. I guess we'll come back here some other time."

The duo left the costume alone and left the Costume House.

Suddenly, the gravitational pull that came from this ominous item had stopped.

Next up was a building in the center of the town made from colorful toy blocks.

"Toy Mansion" it said on a wall.

What would await them inside?





Indoors, the boy noticed the unusual flooring made from building blocks. The kind that you'd want to avoid stepping on barefoot - yes, exactly that kind.

However, this building seemed to be a dead end, at least the only door that seemed to lead somewhere was closed shut with no way of entering.

"I guess there is nothing we can do here, let's go check out that third building, shall we?", the boy suggested.

The mentioned building was in the eastern part of Toy Town and looked like a giant toy robot. Interestingly enough, it was labeled the Robot House and inside were a bunch of robots in a setting that looked like something out of a sci-fi movie's spaceship.

Upon looking around, the boy freaked out for a moment when he saw something in a corner of the room.

He walked over and found a robot-like creature standing there, head and arms moving back and forth like a windup doll.

"H-hello? Can you hear me? Are you a Digimon, too?", the boy carefully asked.

However, no response from the robot. No reaction even.

Shortly after, he noticed a few more of these robot dolls and tried conversing with them one after another.

But each time, the robots wouldn't say anything - instead, simply doing their hypnotic movements over and over again.

The boy tried talking to them a few more times before he gave up and turned around.

"I guess, we are either not welcome here, or we missed something important. But for now, why don't we leave this place and come back once we have more information?"

Metalgreymon nodded in relief - he felt quite uneasy about this place.

In fact, the entire town being empty - and its only residents being completely unresponsive - made for an eerie experience.

They surely would find out more about Toy Town and return with more success the next time around.

But for now, they left and travelled back to Misty Trees where they wandered around for a bit, trying to find new paths to new places.

After everything that had happened, the boy didn't even notice how late it was already.

Metalgreymon looked like he was about to pass out on his feet from sheer exhaustion but of course he didn't complain at all - too invested about the forest's mysteries was his tamer.

But it was time to rest and the boy tried to find a suitable spot that wouldn't pose too much of a threat at night.

"Some plain old cave or hiding place would be ideal", he muttered. "Oh hey, look at that over there, this looks like a cozy spot, don't you think?"

The boy spotted a rocky inlet among the trees.

The leaves formed some sort of roof, protecting them from dangers above.

"Let's stay here for the night, okay?", he suggested. "The only thing that's kind of offputting are these statues around. Who put them there? They have the shapes of Digimon, like this one for example, could be a Greymon or Tyrannomon, don't you think? Looking at them gives me the creeps. What if they used to be alive and were simply turned to stone? But who or what would possess such a devastating power?"

What the boy was referring to were a bunch of statues made from plain old stone that looked like Digimon.

Small ones as well as large ones - hidden in the shadows of the trees and bushes.

Somebody must have placed them there as decoration or maybe they were trophies?

Was someone living in this area?

Suddenly, a spine-tingling gust of wind overcame the duo.



"Hold on, Metalgreymon. Stay still for a second", the boy whispered. "Don't make a sound, I think somebody's here!"

It was quiet - a little too quiet.

The wind had subsided - dead calm.

All of a sudden, a shadow appeared. The boy spotted it on one of the statues. It was getting denser and smaller - whatever this was, it was coming closer and closer.

Then, like shot out of a cannon, a ball-lightning of immense size and velocity came flying towards the two.

Metalgreymon reacted instantly, diving in front of his partner to absorb the blow.

The hit caused a small explosion, burning the surrounding bushes to a crisp and the boy's Digimon partner was knocked to the floor.

"Buddy, are you okay?", the boy panicked. "What in the world was that just now? Who's attacking us in the middle of the night?"

Metalgreymon clenched his teeth and got up shortly after taking this devastating hit.

Adrenaline was kicking in, he had to protect his partner - the next shot would surely come in fast.

But it didn't.

Instead, deafening screeching.

It sounded like it came from a rooster, but it must have been a terrifyingly large one judging from the volume.

And there it was, jumping out from a corner covered by rocks and leaves. A giant rooster-like Digimon appeared and charged at the duo.

The boy remembered fighting an Akatorimon in Gear Savanna and this one looked awfully similar to the one they fought.

However, the one attacking the duo from out of nowhere seemed to be rougher around the edges, more muscular and way more aggressive.

They had to be extra careful.

The boy recalled the recently learned move, All Range Beam.

Maybe it would come in handy in this fight because there was no way of escaping anymore.

The Digimon also known as Kokatorimon was in a frenzy trying to defend its home.

Metalgreymon got in position and watched his opponent's moves carefully.

However, this Digimon was moving unlike any other Digimon they have encountered before.

Kokatorimon was lightning quick and had a brilliantly optimized fighting style.

Any opening it got, it fired another one of these ball lightnings known as Megalo Spark.

And when Metalgreymon was occupied with blocking or dodging this dangerous attack, Kokatorimon took the chance to use a self-buffing move to further increase its abilities.

That way, the Digimon moved even faster and hit a lot harder each time.

The duo found themselves in a pinch.

Metalgreymon wasn't a slow attacker by any means but his speed was no match to the overwhelming nimbleness of Kokatorimon.

They had to come up with a different strategy, and fast.

The constant attacks from their enemy were chipping away at Metalgreymon.

"Think faster, think faster", the boy tried to spur himself on, in hopes of finding a solution. "I think I got it. I'm using these!"



The boy remembered his recent shopping haul at the suspicious card shop back in Gear Savanna. Maybe the items he bought from the market owner who sold regular and recycled items would finally come in handy.

He called Metalgreymon over: "hey buddy, take some of these!", and launched some battle enhancement items at him.

They proved to be quite effective, raising Metalgreymon's attack power, defense as well as his speed. While still not on par with Kokatorimon's speed, the battle was slowly turning around in favor of the two heroes.

Metalgreymon found an opening after a dodged Megalo Spark and punished Kokatorimon's attempt of self-buffing by landing a clean Megaton Punch to the face.

The hostile Digimon was clearly stunned by this impactful blow and its movements became much sloppier all of a sudden.

Was it frustrated due to the clean hit?

Or was the punch to the temple showing its effects?

Either way, it was time to take the wheel for Metalgreymon. He got in position and charged his newly learned technique, the devastating All Range Beam.

A number of drones appeared with each of them flying up in the air, then releasing a powerful beam of light and cutting through their surroundings.

Kokatorimon tried to dodge the beams but to no avail. Too many of them and way too fast.

Metalgreymon landed a clean hit with his new move and Kokatorimon was knocked down.

The hostile Digimon was not finished yet but moving significantly slower after taking this devastating hit.

Metalgreymon, now quicker than his opponent, outmaneuvered it and landed another Megaton Punch, stunning Kokatorimon enough for him to get in position and charge up the finishing blow.

His deadly Giga Destroyer.

The chest compartments opened and the two homing missiles came flying out, landing a perfect hit.

Kokatorimon took the entire impact and was blown away by the force.

It finally collapsed and the battle was won.

The duo's most challenging and demanding battle as of yet.

"We did it, buddy! Great job!", the boy celebrated.

Metalgreymon looked happy and proud but was about to pass out due to his exhaustion.

The battle lasted a good while and the sun was already coming up.

"You're not bad", a voice suddenly said. It was the defeated Kokatorimon who had regained consciousness. "Especially this early in the morning."

The boy looked at it with mistrusting eyes.

He was hesitating if he should invite this sneaky Digimon into the city. After all, it ambushed him and his partner viciously in the early morning with no mercy.

"Aren't you going to invite me to this city of yours?", Kokatorimon added.

The boy was startled. How could this Digimon have known about them and the city?

"I-I don't know yet", the boy stuttered. "How do we know that we can trust you after what you pulled earlier?"

"Fair point", Kokatorimon admitted.

The boy was surprised by this answer.

"I am an art enthusiast as you might have noticed yourself", the Digimon said while pointing at the countless statues from before.

What the boy didn't know - these used to be living, breathing Digimon that have been turned into stone in cold blood by Kokatorimon's special ability.



"So, will you help us?", the boy finally asked after giving it some thought.  
"And what should I do where?", Kokatorimon countered.  
"You know, as you said? Come to the city and help us? Could you please take this a bit more seriously?", the boy responded, annoyed by this Digimon's way of conversing.  
"Hmm, okay, you convinced me. What do they say after all? The early bird catches the worm, haha!", Kokatorimon concluded and ran off towards the city.

The boy stared into the distance, wondering if he had made the right decision.  
However, he knew that by now, the city was filled with strong and responsible Digimon.  
On top of that, Jijimon would never let a rogue Digimon enter File City without proving themselves first.  
"Let's trust in Jijimon and the town's folk", the boy said, smiling at Metalgreymon who was already out on his feet.  
"Oh no, poor guy, I definitely overdid it today", the boy thought to himself. "Rest well, my dear partner, you have done well today. Tomorrow I will wake you up with a delicious breakfast."  
Metalgreymon seemed to have heard that while dead asleep and was growling and drooling already.

An eventful day went by and the duo's journey through Misty Trees was over - at least for now.

But the next area was already awaiting them and with that many more new adventures.

---

## **Chapter Ten**

Neighboring Misty Trees was a region that the heroes have visited before. However, the memories of the journey there weren't among their happiest.

The frosty Freeze Land's northern entrance was where the duo found themselves after their travels through Misty Trees.

The unpleasant climate and unforgiving terrain made this area one of the most dangerous they had encountered on File Island.

But at the same time, it would most likely hold a lot of secrets that have yet to be uncovered.

Right after entering Freeze Land, the heroes were greeted by a vigilante Garurumon.

This dog-like Digimon didn't seem to be hostile - at least that's what the boy felt from looking at its face - however, it did have an issue with the duo's presence in this area.

"Hey you, if you want to get through, you have to beat me first", Garurumon barked with confidence, not with aggression.

The boy noticed that Metalgreymon didn't struggle with the cold temperatures anymore like he used to when he was a Greymon, so he decided to take on Garurumon's challenge.

"Fine, we'll fight you under one condition! No cheap tricks or the like, we want a fair and square fight, got it?", the boy demanded.

Garurumon howled loudly. "Of course, who do you think I am? I love a fair fight because I always win regardless, hehe."

And so the two Digimon got in position as the battle was about to start.

Garurumon showed its tremendous speed by running around the icy terrain like it was nothing. It seemed it had the home-field advantage but Metalgreymon wouldn't give up so easily.  
He fired off a devastating All-Range Beam that lit up the surroundings and melted a bit of the snow and ice on the ground, making it much easier for the large android Digimon to move around.



"I see, not a bad strategy. But can you also handle this?", Garurumon shouted as it charged a powerful move.

In fact, it barely had to charge the technique to be at full power. It came out almost instantly and hit Metalgreymon at full force. The devastating move also known as Ice Statue took its toll on the boy's partner Digimon.

Metalgreymon was frozen solid for a second before the impact of the then exploding icicles dealt massive damage.

Not only that but he was also stunned in the process and unable to move for a little while.

The boy looked on in disbelief. He had never seen a move like this before but was quickly humbled by its sheer speed and power.

However, he reacted quickly, throwing a status-recovery item known as Various towards Metalgreymon. One of the items he purchased earlier at the card and item shop.

This item healed Metalgreymon's compromised movement instantly and he was able to charge at Garurumon at full force, dealing a devastating Megaton Punch.

The boy noticed that his partner might need some attack buffs like in the previous fight with Kokatorimon and so he threw some attack enhancing disks at him.

The next All-Range Beam would then deal massive damage and Metalgreymon was about ready to release his Giga Destroyer to end things.

Garurumon however, reacted quickly and mixed it up with some different moves, trying to throw Metalgreymon off of his game.

But to no avail.

Metalgreymon tanked the incoming hits like a brick wall and focused mainly on charging his power to deal the final blow.

Garurumon couldn't believe its eyes when it saw the homing missiles emerge from Metalgreymon's chest compartment.

The sheer force of them swirled up all the snow nearby and the Giga Destroyer hit their mark, knocking Garurumon out in the process.

It was a decisive victory for the two heroes as Garurumon slumped down.

"Victory!", the boy celebrated and with him his Digimon partner.

He walked up to Garurumon to collect an ability enhancing chip and waited for the defeated Digimon to regain its consciousness while tending to Metalgreymon in the meantime.

Garurumon woke up a short while later and looked anything but pleased with the outcome of the battle.

It growled and barked: "Ggrrr, I usually never lose when the battle goes on fairly however this was anything but a fair fight. It was two against one, don't you agree?"

The boy was surprised by what he just heard. No Digimon had ever pointed out something like this before so it made him think.

"You're not wrong there", he admitted. "Using items on my Digimon partner clearly gave him the advantage immediately, that much I will admit."

Garurumon howled: "great, so how about we run it back? I need to tend to my wounds first, however. So I suggest we meet again tomorrow afternoon before sunset in the same place? And this time it will only be the Digimon fighting without interference. Deal?"

"Deal", the boy responded. "We will be here and I will only watch on."

"Great, I am looking forward to it then, see ya!", Garurumon barked as it limped away.

The battle surely took its toll on the tough Digimon, so the boy wondered if it would even be at 100% the next time around.



Either way, he had to come back here with Metalgreymon at the designated time to defeat Garurumon again and potentially ask it to join the city.

However, next on their agenda was further exploration of Freeze Land and so the duo continued to march forward through the snow and ice.

They arrived at an awfully familiar place.

"Wait, do you recognize this igloo, Metalgreymon?", the boy shouted.

Metalgreymon nodded - they have been here before but under very unpleasant circumstances.

The boy remembered that he messed up by recklessly feeding his Digimon partner that Moldy Meat they found on their journeys, getting him sick in the process and then resulting in both of them collapsing during a snow storm.

Yes, if it wasn't for Frigimon on that day, who knows if they would have made it out of there alive.

The boy recalled Frigimon being livid at him for being so reckless.

But he wanted to come back here to prove that he can make his partner digivolve into a Digimon that doesn't mind the cold at all and so here they were.

Metalgreymon was stronger and healthier than ever and they were ready to show Frigimon the fruit of their labor.

The boy knocked at the igloo's wall, announcing their entry. "Hello, are you home Frigimon?"

Frigimon, who was inside, turned around, surprised by the duo's unannounced visit.

"Oh, it's you!", the friendly Digimon said. "Wait, what happened to Greymon?"

The boy smirked. He already awaited this question. "He digivolved into Metalgreymon, see? He can endure the cold now, no problem! I came here to show you."

"Digivolve?", Frigimon responded looking absolutely puzzled.

The boy didn't elaborate further, instead got straight to the point. "Will you join us in the city? We're rebuilding it to save the island!"

"And what am I supposed to do there? I like my cozy house here in Freeze Land!", Frigimon countered.

The boy tried to come up with a convincing reason - that's when he spotted some delicious looking snacks on the kitchen counter.

He wondered if Frigimon loved to prepare food and desserts so he suggested a shop or a cooking related job.

"A shop?", Frigimon asked - eyes wide open. "I've always wanted to have my own food shop. Oh yes, I can already see it - many customers lining up for my snowcone ice cream."

Without hesitation, Frigimon ran outside and directly towards File City, not even packing anything at all.

The boy looked on, then looked back at Metalgreymon. "Wow, this went even better than expected, don't you think buddy?"

Metalgreymon roared so loudly from happiness, the icy walls began shaking.

"Let's leave this place, we don't want to lay waste to it, haha", the boy laughed.

Another successful city recruitment for the unstoppable duo.

They were on a roll as of late so they continued to ride the wave of success deeper into Freeze Land.

On their way through the snowy plains, they encountered some strong Digimon such as Hyogamon - who was another OGREMON variant - as well as the diabolic Icedevimon. A fallen angel Digimon covered in ice.





The duo had to fight their way through some enemy ranks and in the process, Metalgreymon learned another devastating technique from one of the Hyogamon.

The destructive Buster Dive.

A leaping front headbutt that has the ability to inflict the confusion status effect on rare occasions.

Definitely another useful move for their ever growing arsenal.

The duo noticed a signpost at a crossroads however it was entirely covered in snow and impossible to read.

The boy shook some of the snow off and managed to decipher the engraving on the wooden sign.

"West: Ice Sanctuary - East: Freeze Land Beach", it said.

"Beach?", the boy read out loudly. At first, he was excited but then quickly realized that a beach in an area like this was most likely just a bunch of ice floe and unpleasantly cold water.

Either way, the duo decided to march downhill towards the eastern part of Freeze Land.

On their way down, they encountered some Snowagumon as well as Snowgoblumon.

Neither of them was looking for any trouble - probably due to Metalgreymon's intimidating presence.

After successfully hiking downwards, the heroes already saw the ocean in the distance.

Next, they passed a few hills with cave entrances, one of them being guarded by a jolly, penguin-like Digimon.

The blue colored Digimon spotted the duo and started talking immediately, as if they were waiting for somebody to arrive.

"Hey you!", the Digimon known as Penguinmon opened. "How about a match?"

The boy looked confused. He had no clue what the Digimon meant by a match.

"What do you mean, a match?", he asked.

"A match of Digimon Curling of course, what else?", Penguinmon explained as if it was the most obvious thing in the world. "If you win, I will do whatever you say!"

The boy couldn't believe what he just heard.

To him this was the perfect opportunity to invite Penguinmon to File City.

All he had to do was win a game of this so called Digimon Curling, whatever that was.

"Okay, so if I win, you will join File City as a resident, got it?", he explained.

"Sure, whatever", Penguinmon responded as if they didn't even care about the losing conditions.

They must have been sure they would win the game anyway.

"The first time around, it'll cost you nothing to play against me but if I win and you want to try again, you will have to bring me a fish next time, understood?"

The boy nodded - his eyes were burning with confidence.

That's when he noticed that he had never even heard of Curling before, nor did he have a single clue how to play.

"Wait, I don't even know the rules to this game. How am I supposed to play?", he asked.

"Don't you worry about that buddy", Penguinmon responded. "I will explain everything to you inside. Now let's go!"

And so they entered the icy cave that turned out to be a perfectly equipped Curling court.

The boy noticed a bunch of stone-like things with handles on the ground.

"These are called curling stones", Penguinmon opened. "Each player receives five of them at random.

They differ in weight and sometimes you even receive a rare one with claws. That particular one will stay in place once used, no matter what. The lighter your curling stone, the less force you need to throw it farther and vice versa of course."

The boy kept nodding, taking mental notes. "And what's the objective? How do I win?", he asked.



"Patience, boy, patience!", the feathered Digimon chirped. "I was about to get to that. You see these markings on the floor? Land your curling stone on "Good" and you'll receive two points. Land it within the blue line and you'll receive a single point. However, if you land your stone on "Bad" that means two points will be subtracted from your total, got it? Oh and, you can totally bounce stones off of the arena walls or use them to push other stones out of position. This makes for some interesting gameplay tactics. Whoever has the most points after all stones have been used, wins. If it's a draw, you'll lose, sorry not sorry! See this line that says "Delete Area" above? If your stone lands here, it will be removed from the battle court and you won't get it back. That about covers it. Let me know if you're ready to go or if I should explain the rules again!"

Penguinmon started panting from all the talking.

It seems they haven't been talking to anyone for a while - all the more excited they were when the boy and Metalgreymon showed up.

The boy got into position while his Digimon partner stepped behind him to cheer him on.

Penguinmon pulled out a random selection of ten curling stones and distributed them blindly for equal chances.

However, it became apparent that the boy did not have the luck of the draw.

"Haha, I guess this is what you call a home-field advantage", Penguinmon laughed after noticing the unfair distribution of curling stones.

*Two lightweight, two medium and one heavy stone* for the boy while Penguinmon received *two medium-clawed stones, one medium and two heavy ones*.

"Oh boy, this is not going to be easy", the boy sighed, looking back at his partner Digimon who was still cheering him on.

"I can do this! Let's go", he fired himself up.

"You may start!", Penguinmon said.

And so, the boy took his first stone, a medium one, to get a feel for the right amount of momentum and force he had to use to land at a good spot.

He surveyed the arena and noticed two "Good" spots - one in the center and one on the bottom left of the field.

The "bad" spot was on the bottom right respectively. He had to avoid it at all costs.

He aimed, and let go of the curling stone which slithered along the smooth, icy flooring.

Further and further it went towards the center of the court. Of course, he tried to land it on "Good" but unfortunately, he only managed to barely make it touch the blue line.

"Okay, that's one point at least. Not too shabby for my first swing!", he motivated himself.

"Alright, it's my turn!" Penguinmon chirped. "Now here we go!"

Penguinmon grabbed one of the clawed medium stones and aimed for the bottom left two point area.

They took measure, swung and watched the curling stone land perfectly on the targeted spot.

"Ha, two points, easy!", the talented Digimon celebrated. "I guess you're not that good huh?", they suddenly taunted the boy.

Now that Penguinmon was in the lead, they were allowed to shoot their second stone first.

They grabbed their other clawed medium stone and aimed for the center of the field, right where the boy had placed his first medium stone. Was the clawed one going to push his stone out of the way, possibly on to "Bad"?

The boy expected the worst to happen but when Penguinmon took aim, their feathered wings slightly slipped from the curling stone's handle and the swing wasn't optimal anymore.

From the looks of things, the Digimon got too cocky and concerned themselves too much with



bragging about their skills.

The second clawed stone did connect with the boy's first one, however, instead of sending it on to "Bad", it pushed the stone from the blue line directly on to the centered "Good" spot, awarding the boy with two points in the process while the clawed one didn't even land near the blue line, hooking itself into the ice and staying there for the rest of the game.

It was now two and two.

A tie.

But that wasn't good enough.

The boy had to win in order to get Penguinmon to move to File City.

He grabbed his only heavy curling stone and thought long and hard about how to use it. He decided to go for the bottom left "Good" spot.

All he had to do was use the arena's walls and bounce the stone off of them to bypass Penguinmon's first clawed stone that was firmly placed on "Good".

The boy took aim and released the stone with great force. He had to use a lot of strength to be able to get it to travel far across the court. And indeed, his plan worked. He avoided the clawed one and landed perfectly on the lower part of the bottom right "Good" panel.

"Score!", he yelled with excitement while Penguinmon gave him a skeptical look.

"You go again then", the jolly-turned-grumpy Digimon reminded him.

It was now four and two in favor of the boy so he was allowed to use the third stone first.

He decided to go for his second medium-weight one. His plan was to keep the light ones in the back to use them for aggressive tactical play against Penguinmon's upcoming stones.

Due to the already stacked field, the boy had to carefully consider his shooting direction for the next stone.

He decided to go for the center "Good" field, however he would have to use the far right arena wall and bounce the stone off of there to be able to reach the desired spot.

The second clawed stone was simply in the way making a direct shot impossible.

He took his time aiming, and then swung for the fences. The stone slithered across the field, bouncing off of the barrier and moved closer to the center panel.

Unfortunately, it didn't have enough force to land directly on "Good". It was too complicated to calculate the exact force needed for it to land perfectly. But at the very least, he managed to land his third stone on the edge of the blue line, awarding him with yet another point. That left him at five points while Penguinmon was still stuck at two.

"Now it's finally my turn", Penguinmon barked. The feathered Digimon looked like the past few rounds ate them up inside.

They grabbed their only heavy stone and pointed it directly at the center.

"I'm going to knock your stone into next week, haha!", Penguinmon bragged.

Due to the players basic position, they had different angles at which they could launch the stones.

This gave Penguinmon a slight edge in this very specific case as they could avoid the clawed stone that was blocking the path for the boy.

Penguinmon released the heavy stone and managed to connect with the boy's medium stone that he just placed on the blue line depriving him of that one point.

Unfortunately for the hero, the sheer force of the heavy stone knocked his medium one far away from the center panels.

Even worse, Penguinmon managed to push the medium stone on to "Bad" resulting in a two point subtraction for the boy, while the feathered Digimon's heavy stone landed on the blue line.



This changed the dynamics of the entire game completely. Penguinmon was in the lead three to two all of a sudden with both players still having two stones left to use.

The suspense was firmly noticeable and both participants had to give it their all to come out on top. With two lightweight stones left, the boy had a slight tactical advantage as he could mess up the entire playing field with ease.

At the same time, one medium and one heavy stone for Penguinmon gave them a choice to react to the boy's next move that was about to happen.

And so, the boy decided to use a lightweight stone and shoot it towards the bottom left of the field, hoping it would land next to his heavy one that was almost untouchable due to the clawed one's position.

He aimed and used not too much force, so he would land it on "Good" without affecting his other stone.

The light stone bounced off of the wall and avoided the clawed one, landing perfectly on the "Good" panel, awarding the boy with yet another two points. This left him at four points, putting him in the lead again.

It was now time for Penguinmon to use their next one.

They decided to use their last heavy curling stone and went for a safe play. Pushing their previous stone that was sitting on the blue line towards the center on to "Good" while possibly landing their heavy one on the blue line as well.

Unfortunately for the feathered Digimon, they underestimated the weight of the heavy curling stone this time around and so it didn't have enough force to travel far. The fourth stone landed in the middle of the field, however still far from any point-awarding panels.

"Damn", Penguinmon yelled. "Why am I so nervous all of a sudden?"

The boy's unexpected skills caught the hosting Digimon completely off-guard and so it was time for the final round.

The boy decided to go for a risky move that might lead to a preliminary decision, if executed to perfection.

His goal was to use the final lightweight stone to ram the opponent's stone placed on the centered blue line - which would ultimately be moved towards the "Bad" panel on the bottom right, potentially even knocking the boy's stone out of there.

"Two birds with one stone - literally - can I do it?", he tried to fire himself up.

He took aim, carefully and slowly, readjusted multiple times and then finally decided for the final trajectory of his stone.

He swung at full force.

The stone bounced off of the barrier, hitting the opponent's stone as intended. The boy's stone landed on the blue line which was great but not optimal, however Penguinmon's stone was launched towards the bottom right, directly on to the "Bad" panel, even knocking the boy's other stone out of the penalty area.

This shockingly left Penguinmon at zero points while the boy's score was catapulted to a staggering seven points which made it next to impossible for Penguinmon to turn this game around with a single stone.

Nonetheless, the game would only end once all stones were used up, so Penguinmon, in all their rage, launched their final stone at full force, almost entirely uncontrolled.

The Digimon's rage had truly gotten to them and so the final stone bounced clean off of the clawed one in the center, catapulting it all the way back to the "Delete Area" where it would ultimately be removed from the game.



A sad ending for the usually gifted curling player, but an even more triumphant victory for the boy and his partner Digimon who at this point had fallen asleep somewhere in the cave.  
The boy celebrated loudly which woke Metalgreymon up from his nap.  
“A seven and oh sweep!”, he yelled as they left the curling arena.

Penguinmon had to take a minute to regain their composure but then admitted their defeat.  
“You were the better player today, so you win - even though I usually never lose!  
However, a deal is a deal. I will join this city of yours if you insist.  
But I already know what I am going to do there, hehe.”

And so, Penguinmon waddled away towards File City and the duo had passed their most unusual test as of yet with flying colors.

“I actually wouldn’t mind had we lost - that would give me an excuse to go fishing haha”, the boy laughed as he and his Digimon partner continued exploring the vast Freeze Land.

---

## **Chapter Eleven**

The sun was already lowering on the horizon and night was creeping in. The nights in Freeze Land were especially cold, unlike anything the heroes have experienced before.

“Let’s keep exploring for a little longer and then call it a day, how does that sound, buddy?”, the boy suggested.

Metalgreymon agreed by eagerly walking ahead.

He had spotted an unusual alignment of ice blocks at a nearby shore. In fact, there were three of those strangely shaped stacks of ice.

The duo walked closer and noticed that these were half-igloos made from large ice blocks and sitting inside were some rather friendly looking Digimon.

One of each sitting in an igloo of their own, surrounded by a plethora of rare items and valuables.

The hairy yeti-like Digimon spotted the heroes and one of them waved them over.

“Hey you, I haven’t seen you guys around here before”, the Digimon opened. “We are Mojoyamon and we are item traders. We collect and trade rare valuables - maybe we have something you need and vice versa?”

The boy was intrigued by their offer.

Never would he have imagined to find item collectors this far off on the island.

“That sounds interesting”, he responded. “Could you show me your collection, please?”

And so, the Mojoyamon, one after another, presented the items they were willing to trade.

However, they asked for very specific items in return which the boy only had a few of them on him.

He decided to note down the demanded items so he could collect them and come back at a later time. He had a feeling that helping the Mojoyamon would come in handy eventually. Their trading skills would surely be a great fit for the city.

He started writing and it came down to the following item trades:

*A Digi-Mushroom for a Medium Recovery, a Super Carrot for an Omnipotent, a Happy Mushroom for a Hair Grower, Giant Meat for an Auto Pilot, a Black Trout for a Restore - he would have to go fishing after all - a Highspeed Disk for Medicine, an Omnipotent for a Super Offense Disk, a Medium Recovery for a Super Defense Disk and finally a Digi-Anchovy for a Super Speed Disk.*



After noting everything down, the boy remembered that he already had some of these items in his possession, however he ultimately decided to not trade a single item yet. Instead, he planned to come back later and get all the trades done back to back. He wanted to impress the Mojiyamon as best as he could, so one of them - or even all three of them - would eventually join the city.

He politely thanked them for their offers and promised to come back once he had gathered all the valuables for them.

The Mojiyamon waved them goodbye with happy faces and so the duo moved further across Freeze Land's beach area.

It was finally nighttime and they were looking for a suitable spot to rest at - one that wouldn't result in them being sneak-attacked like the last time when Kokatorimon viciously ambushed them.

However, it proved to be a difficult task to find a safe spot around the endless floe across the beach. The area was wide open and hostile Digimon were roaming around.

After walking a bit further, the boy noticed an elevated area with small hills and solid ground not too far from their current position.

One of those hills struck him as odd, however.

He decided to walk up to that specific hill and inspect it.

Maybe it was a good hideout for the night.

When they got closer, the duo quickly noticed that the supposed hill was in fact a living, breathing creature. It was moving and making sounds.

It turned out that it was a giant ocean Digimon that looked like a whale.

The boy was startled due to the sheer size of the creature.

It was unlike anything he had seen in this world before.

He slowly approached the massive Digimon as he didn't sense any ill will from them.

A sudden movement from the Digimon then triggered a wave strong enough to move some of the floe around.

"Woah, careful now", the boy reacted as he tried to maintain his footing.

"Who's there?", it suddenly echoed. An incredibly deep voice had started talking to the duo.

"Did that just come from this huge thing?", the boy wondered and then responded. "Hello, I am a human from another world and this is my partner Metalgreymon."

"I sense great power", said the large Digimon.

"Sense? Can't you see?", the boy wondered.

"I am Whamon", the sea creature responded. "I am blind but I can sense almost anything. Will you listen to my story?"

The boy noticed some despair in the Digimon's voice, despite it sounding so deep and intimidating at first. But he felt like he needed to help this one out - imagining how useful of an ally they might become.

"Okay, I will hear you out. What's on your mind?", the boy softly responded.

Whamon released a water spout from relief.

"Finally, someone who will listen to me. So, the thing is, I usually live in the ocean, deep under water and I have a Secret Beach Cave that serves as my resting spot. I'm also hiding my prized treasure in there. Unfortunately, some bad guys got there with a submarine and kicked me out of my own place. And now I am stranded here with nowhere else to go, hoping for a kind soul to help me out."

"Oh no, that sounds horrible!", the boy worried. "Of course, we will help you reclaim your cave, but how do we get there? I'm not a bad swimmer but the water is freezing and you said the cave is under water?"





"That's going to be the least of our concerns", Whamon proclaimed. "Get inside, I will get us there!" "Inside?", the boy wondered as Whamon opened their large mouth.

The boy understood. He and Metalgreymon would be able to use Whamon as a submarine of their own.

"Okay, Metalgreymon, are you ready?", the boy asked.

Metalgreymon didn't look too pleased at the thought of being swallowed by a giant whale-Digimon but what other choice did they have?

And so, the duo hopped into Whamon's mouth and travelled underwater to the Secret Beach Cave. A short while later, they landed and what they immediately spotted when getting off was a suspicious banner hanging from the walls.

"Ogre", it said.

"Oh, no, I think I know who we are dealing with here", the boy worried.

"Let's prepare for a numbers disadvantage, buddy", he warned Metalgreymon. "Just stay here, Whamon, we will go inside and take care of this. I think I know who took your cave and I know exactly how to deal with them.

Whamon thanked them both and patiently waited at the shore.

Having arrived inside, the boy spotted his arch nemesis, the bandit and fugitive, Ogremon, surrounded by some of his Gabumon henchmen.

They were most likely plotting their next evildoings from their supposed new base of operations.

"Hey, you!", the boy yelled at them.

"Oh no, not you again!", Ogremon reacted, shocked by how quickly the duo had found them.

"Hey, that's my line!", the boy complained. "Either way, what were you thinking, kicking out Whamon from their own place? Don't you have any compassion at all?"

"Of course, I don't haha!", Ogremon brazenly responded. "Do you think you stand a chance, boy? You are outnumbered, as always!"

"Oh, and that worked super well in your favor the last two times we fought, didn't it?", the boy sarcastically shouted, expecting Ogremon to be upset about it.

But Ogremon didn't stop grinning.

He probably had something up his sleeve and the duo would find out soon enough.

"Boss, should I?", one of the Gabumon asked Ogremon.

"Yes, do it!", Ogremon instantly responded, not taking his eyes off the boy and his Digimon partner.

Gabumon sprinted towards the back of the room in a sudden haste.

They were calling for something or someone.

A few moments later, a dark presence emerged from the cave.

Metalgreymon tensed up.

He could feel a power unlike anything he had ever faced before.

"Let's be careful here now, buddy", the boy said. He noticed his partner's uneasiness.

Out from the shadows appeared a big, sea-snake-like Digimon with a sharp blade sticking out from their forehead.

The dark energy they emitted was suddenly cooling down the cave tremendously.

"Let's not underestimate this guy", the boy warned his partner while turning towards Ogremon again who couldn't contain its gleeful laughter. "So, you have a bodyguard now, huh?"



Ogremon's laughter got louder and louder.

"You're finished, haha! Master Waruseadramon, if you will, please!"

The intimidating Digimon moved forward - and so, the battle began.

Sparks were flying immediately as every participant launched an attack to gain the upper hand as early as possible.

What turned out to be an advantage for the heroes was the fact that Ogremon and his crew used techniques with a wide area of effect - disregarding their allies entirely.

Even Waruseadramon didn't seem to care much about hitting their comrade-in-arms, charging their most powerful technique, Aurora Freeze and knocking out Gabumon with a single hit.

The pretty looking attack, resembling the Northern Lights, turned out to be a devastating move that damaged both Ogremon and Metalgreymon badly.

The boy identified this threat quickly and changed his strategy.

"Metalgreymon, try and interrupt Waruseadramon as soon as they are going for this technique again!"

Metalgreymon nodded and paid close attention to Waruseadramon's movements.

While Aurora Freeze was indeed a powerful move, its startup time was an exploitable weak spot that the duo had to take advantage of.

And they did - as soon as Waruseadramon went for another one of these moves, Metalgreymon was right there, interrupting their technique with a quick Megaton Punch.

This led Waruseadramon to change their strategy and use the much weaker Winter Blast that would also hit all participants equally but was much faster in execution.

This gave Metalgreymon an edge and he took advantage by trying to knock out Ogremon who was already limping around from the bad hits he took.

One devastating Buster Dive and Ogremon was done for, leaving only Waruseadramon conscious.

The mischievous Digimon knew that they had to change their strategy in order to stand a chance but their efforts were futile.

Metalgreymon's battle strategy was simply too flawless and after a short while he was ready to fire off his most devastating move, the Giga Destroyer.

Waruseadramon tried their best to stop Metalgreymon from launching his finishing move, but it was already too late.

The two missiles showed no mercy and landed a direct hit.

Waruseadramon went down and the seemingly unfair battle was won without any bigger issues.

The boy was truly proud of his Digimon partner who prevailed despite the odds not being in their favor.

But it wasn't time to celebrate yet, the boy had to kick Ogremon and his crew out of Whamon's secret cave, otherwise they would simply remain here.

A thought came to his mind - what if he invited Ogremon to join File City?

As insane as that thought sounded in his head, he was thinking of other ways of keeping an eye on this troublemaker but nothing better came to mind.

The best way for Ogremon to be supervised at all times was for him to join the city and make himself useful to Digimon society.

As soon as Waruseadramon regained their consciousness, they fled through a hidden backdoor in the cave, leaving no trace behind.

"Damn, this one got away!", the boy cursed.

He couldn't let Ogremon get away, too.

Back at the shore, where Whamon was waiting, the submarine that the bandits used to get here was still parked.



"Maybe if we block off the way to that submarine, we can have a conversation with OGREMON and convince him to help us!"

But unfortunately for the boy, he was taking too much time thinking of how to reason with OGREMON. The heinous Digimon had already snuck past him and METALGREYMON.

"Wait!", the boy yelled in desperation. He had to come up with a convincing argument to budge OGREMON. "Why don't you join the city and help us? I'm sure if you work hard and do your best, everyone will forgive you for your sins!"

"Well", he was thinking, "that sounded much better in my head. Let's hope he falls for it."

OGREMON turned around, looked back at the boy and barked: "forgive me? Are you sure?"

The boy's eyes lit up.

"Yes, you won't know unless you try!"

"Okay, you convinced me!", OGREMON suddenly responded. "I will join this city of yours!"

The boy was about to celebrate when he noticed the slight sarcasm in OGREMON's voice.

He started running towards the troublemaker to pin him down but it was already too late.

"Haha, you dumb fools", OGREMON grunted. "As if I'd ever help you. I'm outta here, see ya!"

The bandit quickly boarded the submarine, closed the hatch shut and departed, leaving a disappointed boy and METALGREYMON behind.

WHAMON watched on and couldn't believe it either but they quickly tried to console the boy by pointing out their victory.

"Hey, don't be down in the mouth. You achieved your initial goal, you reclaimed the Secret Beach Cave for me. That's all that matters now, doesn't it?"

The boy raised his head and looked at WHAMON.

"You're right, that's what we came here for and the intruders scrambled."

"And now that that's done, I would like to ask you for another favor", WHAMON continued.

The boy looked confused.

"By recruiting Digimon for the city, you are saving the island step by step, and that includes the ocean. So please, allow me to help you out by joining the city as well", WHAMON offered.

At first, the boy put on his usual accomplished face when gaining a new resident for the city, however this time, he looked more puzzled than ever.

"Wait, if you were planning to join File City anyway, wasn't this entire reclaiming operation for nothing? What did we even risk our lives for?", he pointed out with frustration in his voice.

"You are not wrong and I apologize for the request", WHAMON admitted. "But I would really like to help you now, seeing how you handled this whole situation. Please, I will be of great use to you and the townsfolk. Also, you can have my prized treasure. It's in the back hidden in a chest."

"Of course, I won't say no to any new residents for the city", the boy confirmed after having calmed down a little. "But your personal treasure? How could I possibly accept that?"

"I appreciate the sentiment, but please accept it as a token of gratitude!", WHAMON adamantly requested.

"Okay, thank you very much! I will pick it up at some point but let's get out of here, shall we?", the boy suggested. "Do you know the way to File City?"

"Yes, indeed I do", WHAMON responded. "I will drop you off at the Freeze Land coast where we met, first, however."

"That's okay, thank you", the boy said.

And so, the Secret Beach Cave was rescued, OGREMON and his lackeys were once again banished and WHAMON was on their way to File City.



The heroes and the large whale-Digimon parted ways back at Freeze Land's shore, leaving the duo to themselves again.

That's when the boy realized that it was already past Metalgreymon's bedtime.

The liberation battle lasted so long that he completely forgot to put his partner Digimon to sleep. He instantly regretted not asking Whamon to drop them off directly in File City.

Now, they were stranded in the unpleasant, icy Freeze Land with no comfortable, safe shelter in sight.

He remembered that they had yet to explore the western part of Freeze Land.

The boy recalled the signpost referring to a place called Ice Sanctuary.

However, they would have to come back some other time for that.

"You know what, buddy?", the boy pointed out. Metalgreymon was listening carefully, despite being half asleep already. "I can't let you sleep in a place like this after you fought so hard and valiantly."

He pulled out one of his items - the ever so useful Autopilot.

"Let's go home, shall we?", he smiled at Metalgreymon who was happily stomping his feet, almost breaking the floe underneath.

"Be careful", the boy panicked. "I for one do not want to take an ice bath this late at night, or ever to be honest."

Metalgreymon smiled and so the duo used the Autopilot to be teleported back to File City instantly.

They hadn't been there in a long while, so both were extremely curious about all the changes the city had undergone.

But that was for the day after - firstly, they went back to Jijimon's house, greeting the old geezer and then instantly fell asleep on the spot.

"Haha, it seems you two have some eventful day behind you and oh boy, look at how big your Digimon partner has gotten", Jijimon laughed. "I can't wait to hear all about it tomorrow", as he covered them both with a patchwork blanket.

---

## **Chapter Twelve**

The sunrays were carefully invading the fragile walls of Jijimon's house and gently tickling the faces of the two heroes as they woke up from their slumber.

"Good morning, you two!", Jijimon said. A friendly smile was forming on his bearded face. You couldn't see it, but it was there.

The boy got up first and talked to the town elder for a little while, telling some of their stories and exchanging some valuable information.

"So you met Cherrymon?", Jijimon asked.

He was particularly interested in what that wise Digimon had to say.

The boy elaborated on what he had learned about the island's danger and how they could possibly continue from their current position.

"It's clear, we will need even more residents for the city and then combine our strengths to defeat the dangers looming ahead", Jijimon emphasized.

The boy nodded in agreement.

"But why don't you explore File City a little bit. A lot has changed since you both last visited", the elder suggested.



Metalgreymon, who had just woken up as well, looked forward to exploring the city but couldn't quite conceal his rumbling tummy.

It was time for breakfast, first.

The boy agreed and so they paid Palmon a visit at the city's meat farms, stocking up on some consumables while feeding a few pieces of Giant Meat to Metalgreymon.

As the duo walked past the flower pots that were situated next to the city's pond, the boy noticed a strange plant growing from one of the pots.

That's when he checked the calendar.

It was day 15 of the year.

He remembered what Tanemon had said a while ago.

"I planted a Rain Fruit there that usually can be harvested around the 15th of each year."

So, this must have been that Rain Plant.

Tanemon, who had just woken up from their sleep as well, greeted the duo and was delighted by the blooming plant.

"Go ahead and harvest it, you two!", Tanemon encouraged the heroes. "Oh and by the way, have you heard? Rumor has it, a strange plant is growing in Tropical Jungle. Would you care to check it out for me?"

The boy agreed as he harvested the Rain Fruit and stashed it away carefully.

He would have to keep that information in mind when they next visited Tropical Jungle.

But for now, they had to explore more of File City.

Directly next to Tanemon, the boy noticed a brand new dock that led to Whamon who was relaxing in the city's pond.

"Oh, hey you both!", the large Digimon said as they sensed the duo's presence. "I didn't know you wanted to go back to the city, immediately, why didn't you say so earlier?"

The boy blushed, but luckily for him, the blind Whamon didn't notice.

"Ah, don't worry about that", the boy responded, trying to change topics. "Instead, why don't you tell me more about your job in the city?"

"Ah yes, my job, haha", Whamon laughed. "Welcome to the Whamon ferry. There are places that you can only reach via the ocean and I am here to take you there!"

"Wow, that's amazing!", the boy celebrated. "What places are we talking?"

"The Secret Beach Cave of course, so you can pick up that treasure you left behind, remember?", Whamon explained. "And then, there is this ominous place called Factorial Town. I heard rumors that the main entrance is sealed so you can't enter by land. That's where I come in. I will carry you to the town's port, free of charge of course! So, anywhere you would like to go right now?"

The boy was impressed by Whamon's knowledge and perception despite having no eyes.

"That Factorial Town sounds very tempting", the boy pointed out. "In fact, we were trying to get inside before when we travelled through Gear Savanna and that's when we noticed the massive iron door that wouldn't open. Metalgreymon seemed to be magically pulled towards that place, too, so we will definitely have to explore it at some point. However, let's leave that for another day. I have a feeling that we will need special preparation for that. How about we pick up that prized treasure of yours in the cave real quick before we continue exploring the city's new establishments?"

"At your service", Whamon confirmed, letting out a water spout of happiness.



And so, the heroes visited Whamon's cave once more to find the chest that the big Digimon had told them about somewhere in the back.

The boy opened it and what he found looked rather underwhelming at first.

"What? That's...an egg. A plain white egg?", he yelled.

He went back to Whamon to ask about that item and Whamon explained that it wasn't just any old egg.

It's called Mysty Egg and it was one of the most rare items File Island had to offer.

It was in fact a Digivolution item.

"Does that mean my partner will digivolve if I feed this egg to him?", the boy asked.

Whamon confirmed it by saying: "yes, but there are certain conditions. See, this item in particular will make your Digimon digivolve into Digitamamon. Now I have never met a Digimon like this before but I have heard rumors that this one is on a similar level as your Metalgreymon, meaning the item wouldn't work on your current Digimon partner. He has to be at a lower stage of evolution, do you understand what I'm saying?"

"I think I get it now, yes", the boy confirmed. "These evolution stages you are talking about are what my partner went through after each Digivolution. But with an item like this, I can trigger an evolution directly if my partner is at the right stage. This might come in handy later so I will securely store this item at Agumon's item bank. Thanks for your help, Whamon! Now how about we go back to File City?"

Whamon happily agreed and carried the duo back to the city's docks.

The boy stored the mysterious egg at Agumon's bank alongside some other items he didn't need for now.

Next, they walked around File City to find more new residents and establishments.

They met Kokatorimon near the city's toilet. The suspicious looking rooster-Digimon has created an even more suspicious looking statue, claiming it was modern art and that nobody in File City had an eye for abstract art like this.

They also met Elecmon who equipped the city with electrical lights and billboards.

Unimon, Patamon and Biyomon were helping Monochromon in the item shop and they set up a new vending machine that would sell Digimon cards at 100 Bits each. The boy would certainly spend some of his money on that machine at some point.

Next, they met Penguinmon in the arena. Just as expected, they have set up an entire Digimon Curling arena. For one fish, anyone could play a game of curling against the penguin-Digimon.

Outside the arena was another new establishment. The blackboard - a newspaper by Shellmon who claimed to be a know-it-all. Shellmon gathered the latest news, stories and rumors and compiled them on this blackboard to inform every resident of possible threats or simply to tell interesting stories.

"Hey you both", Shellmon yelled upon spotting the duo. "You should really read my newspaper, maybe you'll learn a thing or two that you haven't heard about yet!"

The boy wasn't sure if he could trust everything that Shellmon had published but it surely wouldn't hurt reading the blackboard from time to time.

But for now, they just took a quick look and then waved the city goodbye again. The strange plant that had appeared in Tropical Jungle was going to be their next priority as that area wasn't too far from the city.





They left File City through the western gate and swiftly crossed the Digimon bridge, then traversed the Mangrove Forest deeper in the area.

The duo had to look around for a while before finally finding a strange looking plant sprouting in an inconspicuous part of the jungle.

But there it was, the odd plant that Tanemon had mentioned.

"Wow, it's sprouting, that's great!", the boy pointed out.

However, at second glance he noticed that the plant was looking rather dry compared to the other flora around.

"Oh no, I think it might die if we don't do something", he realized. "Maybe we can use an item to produce a downpour for the plant?"

Metalgreymon pointed his nose at the boy's backpack, trying to remind him of the Rain Plant they had harvested earlier.

"You are absolutely right, buddy!", the boy yelled. "I almost forgot about the Rain Plant. That just might do the trick!"

He pulled out the plant from his bag and held it over the slowly withering plant.

At first, nothing happened but after a few seconds, the blue, wet fruit popped on its own, producing a small shower of rain, watering the mysterious plant just enough so it wouldn't die.

The duo looked on in disbelief as the mysterious plant suddenly started moving - faster and faster - then it began to grow at rapid speed forming whip-like extremities and a face with a big grin on it.

"Hooray, I am saved!", the ominous moving plant celebrated, hopping around using their unusual arms. "I'm Vegiemon, a plant-Digimon. Are you the one who saved me?"

But before the boy could even respond, the Digimon continued bombarding him with words.

"Say, do you like vegetables?"

The boy had to think for a second. Why would a Digimon whose life he just saved ask if their savior likes vegetables? Was it a trick question?

Since the Digimon itself kind of looked like a strange vegetable, the boy figured he'd better say yes to not anger this unpredictable fellow.

"Yes, I love vegetables", he proclaimed.

"Wow, anyone who likes vegetables must be a nice guy!", Vegiemon concluded.

The boy looked even more confused - he didn't even know what to say.

"So, don't you want to invite me to join your city?", Vegiemon continued.

"Wait, how do you even know about File City and that we are looking for new residents?", the boy had to ask. How would a plant that almost withered away even know such things?

"Okay, so you don't want me to come then? Alright, I'll stay here. Sayonara!", Vegiemon snappishly responded.

"Now wait a minute, please!", the boy said. "Please make up your mind, but think carefully!"

"Hmm, what should I do?", Vegiemon wondered. The Digimon had a hard time figuring things out - no wonder after almost biting the dust.

"I would suggest you come to File City and help us rebuild the island", the boy suggested.

"Yeah, I could do that, I have been around here for far too long anyway", Vegiemon concluded.

And so, this baffling encounter turned into yet another city recruitment. The boy just shook his head and waved at Metalgreymon to just keep walking.

"Let's take this victory and not think about it any longer, my head already hurts", the boy complained.



After recruiting Vegiemon for the city, the boy recalled one place they tried to explore earlier but weren't allowed in.

The uncanny house they saw back at Overdell Cemetery.

"Hey Metalgreymon, should we try something?", the boy asked his partner Digimon.

Metalgreymon looked at him with big eyes.

"Back when you still were an Agumon, we tried entering this one scary place, that mansion-like building, remember?"

Metalgreymon nodded.

"How about we try it again now? The place is not too far from here!"

His Digimon partner agreed and so the duo travelled through Tropical Jungle to find the intimidating Overdell Cemetery.

All the way in the back of that place was the scary looking compound also known as Grey Lord's Mansion.

Why it was called this way, nobody knew but that wasn't important for now.

Something had to be going on in that building and the duo was about to find out - that is, if they were able to make entry this time around.

The boy approached the stairway leading up to the mansion's front door and unlike last time - where he was denied entry by a mysterious black force - this time he was able to freely move forward.

"It worked!", he shouted, waving at his Digimon partner. "Let's go inside, Metalgreymon!"

And so the duo opened the huge, ramshackle doors.

They had to use some force to get this cumbersome door to open but when they finally did, they found themselves in an incredibly spacious entrance hall.

"Wow, what an enormous property!", the boy gaped. "I wonder if anyone is home?"

"Hello?!", he yelled as loudly as he could. "Anybody here?"

No response - dead silence in fact.

The boy felt it was a little too silent. How could nobody be living in a mansion like this?

He decided to explore this large place room by room, but when he tried to open the first door to his right, he noticed that it was locked.

It didn't feel like it was locked mechanically however.

It felt more like a mysterious force was keeping him from opening the door, kind of similar to the force that had prohibited him entry into this building before.

Next, he tried a different door but also, no luck.

It was closed shut but at least this time he noticed that it was simply locked mechanically.

"We have to find a key somewhere!", he told Metalgreymon. "Keep your eyes peeled, buddy!"

They continued rattling at every doorknob they found until an unremarkable door, located underneath a giant staircase, opened.

"Hey, this one's actually unlocked!", the boy celebrated. "Let's go!"

And so the duo entered the one door that would open, finding themselves in a lobby of sorts. It wasn't too spacious here and other than a toilet, there wasn't anything of interest either.

Two more doors, one to their left and one to their right, were further in the back.

The right one was locked, too, unfortunately, however the one on the left opened without a key.



Upon entering the room, the boy jumped for a second.  
He was surprised by a trio of Digimon just standing there in a corner, or rather levitating.  
“Bakemon?”, the boy wondered. “No, they look like Bakemon but they are wearing hats. They must be a different species...So there are Digimon that live in this place, I knew it!”

The Digimon in question were called Soulmon - a Digimon that looked very similar to Bakemon, but sporting a large witch's hat that almost covered their entire face.  
The heroes had seen these before at the graveyard.  
The boy didn't want anything to do with these creepy Digimon but they also didn't seem to be hostile in any way.  
“Better just ignore them!”, he suggested and Metalgreymon agreed with a deep growl.

The brittle flooring was creaking under their feet and it got more annoying with each step.  
“This house must be incredibly old”, the boy suspected. “Maybe nobody lives here anymore other than these ghost-like Digimon. But let's not assume things before we haven't explored every room.”

To their right, the duo spotted a fridge. However, strangely enough, it wouldn't open.  
“Who in their right mind would lock their fridge?”, the boy yelled in disbelief.  
The current room seemed to be a kitchen of sorts, but there wasn't anything of use to them, so they continued walking south to another door that luckily wasn't locked either.

“This looks like a mere storage room”, the boy confirmed as he searched this smaller section of the villa.  
He didn't find anything in here either so he walked through the next open door and found himself in an extremely large room.  
The majority of the space was occupied by an enormous banquet table, similar to ones the boy knew from royal castles he had seen in TV shows.  
“So many chairs, but no resident in sight”, he pointed out. “Oh, what's that over there?”

He turned his attention to the fireplace located near the table as something was sparkling in there. Amongst the ashes, he found something that looked like a key, however it was blacked with soot.  
The boy dusted off the item and indeed, it was a key.  
“Is this the Mansion Key that will open the doors for us?”, he wondered. “Let's try it out, right away, Metalgreymon!”

The boy didn't waste any time and ran towards one of the two doors on the right side of the dining hall.  
Fortunately for them, the key would fit and the door would open!  
The duo celebrated as they walked on through, finding themselves back in the giant entrance hall, however this time, with more places to potentially explore.

Just as they were about to open all the other doors in the foyer, they heard an eerie noise from upstairs.  
It sounded like a screech or some other high-pitched sound.

“D-did you hear that, Metalgreymon?”, the boy stopped.  
His knees were shivering.  
Metalgreymon looked around but couldn't find the source of the noise.

“I'm sure it was nothing”, the boy tried to calm himself down. “L-let's continue searching all the rooms!”  
He tried to put on a brave face but his Digimon partner clearly noticed that the boy was feeling uneasy in this place all of a sudden.



Nevertheless, he mustered up all his courage - they were on the verge of a breakthrough, he was sure of it, so he couldn't just bail out.

And so, the duo examined every door in the entrance hall.

All of them would be compatible with the Mansion Key, except the bottom right one that was sealed by that strange force.

"I guess we'll keep this one in mind and return later on!", the boy suggested.

The other rooms they opened were dead ends, however they found some useful battle and status enhancing items in there.

One of the rooms upstairs was particularly interesting as it was equipped with a plethora of books.

"A library!", the boy pointed out. "Maybe there are some useful books that teach me more about File Island or even about the threat!"

He walked up to one of the book shelves and tried to read one of the books.

That's when he noticed the odd letters on the cover.

It was some sort of archaic writing system he had never seen before.

"Too bad, I can't read any of these", he sulked. "And here I thought I would learn something about this world just by reading a few books."

Disappointed in his non-findings, he put the book back on the shelf.

However, he tried pulling out another one that seemed to have some pictures in it.

Maybe the illustrations would give him some clarity or answers?

"This one looks especially interesting", he pointed out. "The cover looks very unique."

But just as he pulled out this special book, the floor beneath his feet started moving all of a sudden.

"Oh no, what's it now?", he panicked as a trap-door opened up underneath.

The duo fell into the hole and while Metalgreymon managed to hold on with his metal claw, his own body weight was too much and the duo came crashing down into a room below.

"Ouch!", the boy cried. "Buddy, did you get hurt?"

Metalgreymon had a bad landing and seemed to have suffered a minor injury.

Given the circumstances, they were quite lucky as the boy was able to heal his partner Digimon with a few healing disks and they were good to go again immediately.

"Where did we land?", he wondered.

But just as he asked, the answer was right in front of him.

A very familiar toilet.

They were in the first room they discovered earlier - the lobby.

The timing couldn't have been better as Metalgreymon had to get some business done right after they landed unpleasantly.

"Haha", the boy laughed. "At least something good came out of this, huh?"

Metalgreymon turned around, blushing a little bit.

"At least we now know that this toilet still works, oh and we have explored most parts of the entrance hall now", the boy joked.

Next was the door to the right side of the toilet.

They haven't opened that one yet but thankfully, the Mansion Key would fit as well.

The old door slowly moved and once again, a motionless Digimon was waiting inside.

Not moving, only watching the duo walk past them.

"I wonder what these guys are doing here and why they are not moving or reacting", the boy thought to himself, hoping he'd find answers soon.



The new room they had just entered featured a rundown wooden staircase that led upwards and shortly after, the duo found themselves in an entirely different complex.

It looked like a laboratory of sorts.

"What in the world is going on here and who is operating this lab?", the boy wondered, growing more and more worried each second.

This area was filled with strange contraptions, operating tables and a number of machines the boy had never seen before in his life.

The blinking buttons and lights were throwing him off, so he just looked ahead to not trip or get lost. Metalgreymon was also keeping an eye out as some mysterious looking Digimon were standing around in this lab.

Or were they even Digimon?

They seemed to not have any skin, eyes or any other distinctive features on them.

They looked more like a green wire-frame construction with arms and legs.

Under no circumstances did the boy want to engage in battle with these ominous creatures.

Instead, he snuck past them to find a few more items in treasure chests, then walked towards the bottom right of the lab, where the floor was covered with a metal lattice.

He carefully walked over it to not accidentally trip but to no avail - just like in the library earlier, another trap-door was triggered, this time only by stepping on the wrong part of the lattice.

Another hole opened in the ground and the duo came crashing down once again.

However, this time, they landed in a completely new room.

"Ah damn, I'm tired of these trap-doors already!", the boy loudly complained. "Buddy, I hope you are okay?"

Metalgreymon got up quickly and showed his partner that he was fine.

No injuries this time.

The boy looked around the place and noticed that they were standing in a bureau of sorts.

"I see, so the psychopath who lives here has a common desk with paper notes, feathers and ink?", the boy mockingly said. "I guess we just walk on through that door over there."

He pointed at the door to their right - not seeing that there was another one right behind them.

But for now, they had a new goal.

Finding a familiar room and possibly a way out of this place.

The boy started to grow tired of the loopholes and booby traps in this mansion.

The next room would be as strange as they come - however that was possible after what they had already witnessed...

Nothing but a large casket was placed in the middle of this chamber.

"First ghosts, then creepy sounds, a secret lab and now a coffin?", the boy whined. "What even is this place? Dracula's mansion? I'm so done with this!"

Unfortunately, this room seemed to be a dead end.

No windows and no door up ahead.

Just the big casket encircled by what seemed to be a bedframe.

"Don't tell me somebody actually sleeps in there?", the boy imagined as he started trembling again.

He slowly walked up towards the coffin and noticed a hidden lever near the headboard. He then carefully tried to pull it and a mechanical sound rang out.



Suddenly, the bedframe folded down entirely and the coffin was automatically lowered into a niche in the ground.

"Quick, Metalgreymon!", the boy yelled. "Hop on here!"

Metalgreymon took a leap onto the platform that still had a casket lying on it and the duo were carried downwards at an alarming speed.

What looked like a sleeping spot just turned into a mysterious elevator.

A few seconds later, the elevator platform stopped and the duo found themselves in yet another undisclosed area.

An immensely spacious basement with even more coffins lining up across the walls.

The light in there was dim and the temperature had dropped significantly.

In the back of the room was a giant statue of some sort of winged demon that seemed to stare the boy down, no matter at what angle he looked at it.

It was only a few moments later that he noticed something else in the basement.

A creature was lying flat on the floor in the center of the room - motionless.

The boy felt like it needed his help and so he carefully approached the body and tried waking it up.

He took a step back for a second when he noticed that the creature lifted their head - barely conscious however.

"W-who are you?", the creature asked.

The boy was stunned at first but managed to regain his composure shortly after.

"Are you okay? What happened to you?", he asked.

"M-meat!", the creature stuttered. "Bring me meat!"

"Oh, so you're hungry?", the boy concluded. "I have meat on me!"

He opened his bag and grabbed a juicy piece of Giant Meat, presenting it to the creature.

However, they didn't react in the slightest, instead growling "Meat" once again.

"Here you are!", the creature said with the last of their energy.

They handed the boy a key but he had no clue what it was for.

Unfortunately, the exhausted creature was unconscious again, so they couldn't respond anymore.

"I guess we will have to find the right hole for this key", the boy concluded.

He took a minute to think and that's when it came to him.

"Wait a second", he turned to his partner Digimon. "Didn't we find this strange locked refrigerator in the kitchen earlier? If I put two and two together, this can only mean that this weakened creature needs to eat whatever is locked inside that fridge. And this key is, quite literally, the key to it!"

Metalgreymon nodded in agreement and so the duo hurried back, trying to find the right path back to that kitchen.

They took the coffin-elevator back upwards and walked into the bureau where they crash-landed earlier.

That's when the boy noticed the other door he had missed before.

"Let's get out of here, quick!", he urged his buddy on and tried opening the door.

Unfortunately, it seemed to be stuck.

"Damn it", he cursed. "The key doesn't fit either but I wonder if I can just turn the knob?"





He went for it and indeed, it worked!  
The door opened and the duo found themselves back upstairs in the entrance hall.  
“Let’s hurry to the kitchen”, the boy emphasized.

Once they got there, he used the key and voilà, it was a perfect match!  
But what they found inside the refrigerator wasn’t anything that looked remotely like food.

Instead there was a note that read: “go back to the spot where you received the points from the dumb one”.  
“Now can it get any more cryptic than that?”, the boy complained, having no clue what this message might mean.

He sat down for a second, rattling his brain.  
Metalgreymon stood beside him, watching the Soulmon carefully in case they tried to pull off a sneak attack.

The boy repeated the message in his head, again and again.  
That’s when he took a wild guess.

“What if the dumb one was that Bakemon we met a while ago? That Digimon didn’t seem to make any sense and we couldn’t even understand a single word they were saying. But what do they mean by “points”? I guess there’s only one way of finding out!”

The boy got up and urged his partner to follow him outside the mansion, back to the graveyard where they first met Bakemon a while ago.

And indeed, something had changed. Right at the foot of the stone staircase they found an odd looking item.

It seemed to be some sort of food indeed.  
An overly bloody steak that reeked of decomposition.

The boy had to hold his breath while picking up the item.  
He securely stashed it away and hurried back inside.

“This surely must be it!”, he guessed. “But why in the world was the food outside all of a sudden when nothing was there before? Who placed it there and who wrote the note in the fridge? I have a bad feeling about this, as if somebody is trying to play a prank, a deadly prank even.”

The duo hurried back and took the shortest route to the basement where they found the collapsed creature.

Once they smelled the bloody meat, they lifted their head and snatched the food item out of the boy’s hands at rapid speed, devouring that piece of meat as if it was their first meal ever.

“Ah, I’m saved”, the creature sighed.

They got up into a seated position however there was no chair or anything to sit on.

The creature was simply floating in mid air looking like they just got very comfortable. Their pale skin, pointy teeth and overall getup really made them look like the aforementioned Dracula the boy had jokingly mentioned.

“Who are you?”, the boy asked carefully.

“My name is Myotismon and I am the lord of this mansion”, the Digimon responded. “All of this is extremely embarrassing. I was studying and my men were supposed to bring me my food but they never came and I simply forgot to eat, leading me to collapse right here. I owe my life to you, young visitor.”

The boy was surprised how nice the scary looking Digimon seemed to be.



"That's no good!", he scolded Myotismon. "You can't let yourself go like that."

"Like I said, this is really embarrassing", Myotismon repeated. "How about you two stay over for dinner and I will explain everything to you?"

"Sure but I won't be able to eat if you serve us bloody meat like the one you just had", the boy worried.

"Haha, of course, that one's specifically for me to consume", Myotismon laughed. "Just wait and see!"

A short while passed and the duo was waiting in the large banquet hall when Myotismon came through the door with a few subordinates by his side.

All of the Digimon the duo had met in the mansion before - the motionless ones - were moving without issue now, carrying a large amount of plates filled with the most delicious looking food the boy had seen in the Digital World so far.

"Mhh, this smells delicious", he kept bringing up while Myotismon was trying to tell him his story.

"Uhm, please listen to me", he said.

"Wow, so yummy", the boy repeated, being entirely distracted by the tasty food.

Metalgreymon was already digging in but the boy was trying to turn his attention to the host, finally.

"Sorry, I got carried away", he apologized. "Now please tell me what has been going on here!"

"As I was saying", Myotismon carried on. "I was conducting research on my latest project when I forgot to eat and my men didn't bring me my food which they usually would do reliably every day. But the real question is, why did they stop acting and just stand around like you mentioned. I can't help but think that this was due to outside interference. Something or someone must have invaded the mansion and caused all this ruckus. On top of that, my men seemed to have lost their ability to speak, at least most of them."

"Oh no, it seems even this mansion is impacted by the island's danger", the boy assumed.

"What danger?", Myotismon reacted. "Please tell me all about it!"

"It's a long story but in short, we are gathering Digimon in File City to rebuild it and stand against an unknown threat that left almost every Digimon brainwashed to a point where they would forget their own language and move away from the city", the boy explained. "So if you and your men could move to the city, I think that would be the best course of action."

"But my men can only fight", Myotismon explained. "And on top of that, I am not ready to leave this mansion behind. My research is far from finished!"

"What are you even researching?", the boy asked before realizing that he might have been a bit too nosey.

He was thinking for a second...

"Then, how about a match?"

"A match?", Myotismon repeated.

"Yes, a match!", the boy repeated. "The city has an arena for fighting. Maybe a match or two might help your soldiers get better again."

"That is a great idea!", Myotismon said. "I will send them to the arena and who knows, maybe I'll show up for a match, too? But for now, I would like to thank you again for your help. Maybe you can visit me sometime when my research has advanced."

"Sure, I'd love to", the boy confirmed as he walked with Metalgreymon towards the mansion's exit.

And so, their first visit to Grey Lord's Mansion was concluded.

Unfortunately, they didn't gain any new residents for the city but they learned a lot about the imminent



danger of the island. It was more omnipresent than ever and hardly any Digimon was able to avoid its grasp.

However, this visit wouldn't be their last and they would find themselves here again sooner rather than later.

---

## **Chapter Thirteen**

After an unusual adventure inside the mansion, the duo decided to head back to File City for now to read up on the latest news in Shellmon's newspaper. After all, they had promised the curious Digimon to at least give it a shot.

Just when they arrived, Shellmon was already hanging up a new pamphlet. The headline was reading in big letters: "Myotismon has gone missing? The widely popular Myotismon has disappeared from Grey Lord's Mansion. He has been occupied with his studies, but he is also getting old so maybe his career is nearing its end?"

The boy stood there - jaw dropped - he couldn't believe what he was reading. Just a short while ago they were there, rescuing Myotismon and now he is supposed to be missing? What in the Digital World was going on in that mansion?

In his mind, there was no other way - he had to go back and figure out what had happened. He was genuinely worried about Myotismon's wellbeing. Someone must have snuck into the mansion and manipulated the lord and his soldiers.

The boy made a few arrangements like stocking up on items and feeding Metalgreymon a nutritious meal in the city's restaurant.

He had a feeling that some gruesome battles were coming up so he made sure that his partner was fully recharged.

The heroes seemed to be prepared for anything at this point - the darkness that compromised the island seemed to have finally made a move.

They headed east, crossed the Digimon Bridge and found themselves in Tropical Jungle once more. However, this time around, something seemed to have changed.

The boy's sight fell onto that one prominent palm tree that he always thought looked a bit different than the others.

Usually, nothing was going on there but this time, something was moving in circles just in front of it.

A small, pink, winged creature carrying some sort of javelin was flying around without a care in the world.

The boy thought it looked rather cute but was about to find out a harsh truth.

The Digimon in question was a powerful Ultimate-level named Piximon and not to be underestimated.

He wondered why it decided to show up now since the duo had been around these parts countless times before.

He decided to walk up to the Digimon and question it, perhaps even inviting it to join File City.

Piximon, who had already seen them long in advance, opened the conversation: "hey, aren't you the city builder? I'm Piximon, an Ultimate-level Digimon. If you can beat me, I'm going to help you!"



“Wow, that was rather direct”, the boy was thinking. “I guess we should get right to it then.” However, the duo had to be careful. Piximon seemed to be more than confident in its abilities and the swift battle invitation perfectly backed that up.

Piximon didn’t hesitate a second and launched a deadly attack right off the bat. A technique that the boy and Metalgreymon haven’t even seen before. A swarm of mechanical bugs were summoned by Piximon and then scattered around the floor. These bugs were moving on their own, slowly approaching Metalgreymon, attaching themselves to his body and then exploding like grenades, one by one. A painful experience for the heroic Digimon who was knocked back by this unexpected impact.

Unfortunately for the heroes, it got even worse. The deadly bug move came with a secondary effect that transformed Metalgreymon into a 2-D pixel sprite, unable to use his regular moves and unable to block any attacks. He was at Piximon’s mercy, however it showed anything but that. The feisty Digimon kept attacking with its javelin and later summoned another move the duo hadn’t seen before. Confuse Storm, a technique that had a very high chance of confusing their opponent upon hitting them.

Metalgreymon had to fight through status ailments like that and barely had a chance to counterattack. The boy had to quickly alter his strategy, otherwise Piximon would win this battle and potentially run away. He was nervously searching his backpack - maybe he had an item with him that could prevent Metalgreymon from suffering all these effects. And luckily for them, the boy carried something called Protection. A disk that would make a Digimon immune to any status ailments. Now he just had to aim properly to not accidentally equip Piximon with this defensive buff. When Metalgreymon was close to the tamer, he pulled out the Protection disk and launched it right at his buddy who became immune to the annoying status effects in the process. Now it was time to strike back!

Metalgreymon got in position and fired a destructive All Range Beam that hit Piximon at full force. The pink, fairy-Digimon was stunned for a second as it couldn’t believe that Metalgreymon found a way to launch an attack like this.

However, the fight wasn’t over yet. Piximon still had a few tricks up its sleeve. This smart Digimon also adjusted its strategy and used a more defensive approach, blocking a good amount of Megaton Punches until its ultimate move was charged and ready to go. The Bit Bomb, a strong pixel-based bomb that Piximon summoned with its magical javelin. It hit the mark and Metalgreymon took a nasty hit, ending up with very low energy levels.

The boy had to act quickly. This was probably their most challenging fight yet and so he used up a good amount of healing disks to keep Metalgreymon in the fight. Piximon even managed to interrupt a few Giga Destroyer attempts by Metalgreymon which came totally unexpected.

After a fierce back and forth, Metalgreymon finally managed to launch his Giga Destroyer properly. Even the mighty Piximon showed some exhaustion this deep into the battle and this time it was unable to dodge and took a full hit to the face.



Piximon finally went down and the battle was won.  
Metalgreymon however, was injured in the process and so the boy had to provide first aid on the spot - using a bandaid to nurse his buddy's injuries.

Piximon regained consciousness shortly after and praised the boy.  
"Wow, you guys are good! I lost for the first time! Okay it's settled, I will see you in the city!"  
The fairy-Digimon didn't waste any time and accepted its defeat, immediately moving to File City.

Yet another hard-fought victory for the heroic duo but this was unfortunately only the beginning.

The real struggle began now that they had to investigate Grey Lord's Mansion once again.  
The duo traversed the Overdell Cemetery and entered the mansion directly.  
Something already felt off the exact moment they stepped foot inside.

"I can feel an odd presence", the boy mentioned.

Metalgreymon looked quite tense as well and that wasn't because of their tough battle earlier.  
Something was definitely going on in this place but for now, the boy took it upon himself to track down Myotismon who maybe knew more about the mansion's situation.  
First, he looked in the banquet hall where they last met, however nobody was home.  
Next, he tried the basement. Maybe Myotismon forgot to eat again during his studies and collapsed.  
They took the coffin-elevator downstairs and found a whole lot of nothing in the basement.  
"Myotismon really is not here", the boy muttered. "What could have happened to him and his soldiers?  
I'm really starting to get worried here! Let's head outside, maybe we can find clues in the front yard, shall we?"

Metalgreymon nodded and so the duo went back towards the mansion's exit.  
That's when they were stopped by a dark force similar to the one that prohibited them entry the very first time they tried to get inside the mansion.

"What happened? I'm frozen again!", the boy panicked.  
Malicious laughter sounded from up the main staircase.  
A dark, winged creature had appeared.

The fallen angel Digimon also known as Devimon.

"You!", the boy yelled with pure anger in his voice after noticing the creature. "Is this all your doing?  
Where is Myotismon and what did you do to him?"  
Devimon only kept on laughing.  
"Hahaha, why don't you try and find him yourself?"  
"Why even go to such lengths? What did we ever do to you?", the boy tried to reason with him.

Devimon seemed to have a short moment of hesitation and responded: "I don't know why, all I know is that you're my enemy!"

The boy noticed that he was able to move again and charged at Devimon who was standing on top of the staircase.  
However, as soon as the boy ran towards him, he started using his ripped wings and started flying above the duo.  
"Hahaha, maybe Myotismon is still alive, who knows?", he said with the most evil intent and then left the mansion immediately.



"Damn, he's too fast and he is in the air", the boy cursed. "He seems to have been brainwashed as well like all the other Digimon but his case seems to be especially bad. But we have no time to run after this guy. We have to find Myotismon and hope he's still with us!"

The boy noticed that the door on the bottom right of the entrance hall had recently been opened - it didn't look fully shut, so he ran there to inspect it.

And indeed, the black force, preventing him from entering before, was now gone. The knob turned and the heroes were able to get inside!

"Okay Metalgreymon, here we go now - Myotismon must be in there. Let's save our friend, are you ready?", he encouraged his partner Digimon.

Metalgreymon seemed to not be there in spirit fully as he was staring at a wall seemingly spacing out. He was also moving a little slower and breathing heavier than before but the boy didn't notice a thing at the time - too worried was he about Myotismon.

Metalgreymon tried his best to cover up his condition, he didn't want to get in the way at a crucial moment like this.

And so the duo entered the forbidden door, investigating the upcoming rooms carefully.

The room they found themselves in looked like a mere storage, however a suspicious looking elevator was placed in the back.

The heavy sliding doors opened and the boy pressed a button that took them downwards.

"Oh boy, another basement?", he worried. "Maybe Myotismon is being held there against his will."

Having arrived downstairs, they kept moving forward with caution and they found themselves in front of a wall that presented them with two possible paths.

Two dark entrances but which one was the correct one?

Both of them were guarded by Digimon with a Tekkamon standing in front of the left door and a pack of Darkrizamon protecting the right door.

The boy decided to take down the Darkrizamon first as they posed less of a threat in his mind.

That Tekkamon looked a little off, like it was under someone's influence, too.

So the boy wanted to pay special attention to that after disposing of the other Digimon in the room.

Two All Range Beams later and the dark Digimon were defeated.

That's when the boy noticed that the door on the right was a fake.

There wasn't a path behind it. Somebody simply painted the wall with some dark color making it look like there was an entrance.

"Oh no, we were tricked!", the boy worried, looking back at Metalgreymon who was moving slower and slower.

That's when the boy noticed it, too.

"Buddy, are you okay? Are your injuries from before still bugging you? I promise you will get a long rest after all of this is over, just please bear with me a little longer!"

Metalgreymon mustered up his remaining strength and followed the boy towards the left door that was still being guarded by Tekkamon.

The small, bomb-like Digimon was carrying a sharp blade and creepily smiled at the duo.

"I don't think we can convince this one to step aside", the boy feared. "Looks like we will have to enter by force, let's go, Metalgreymon!"





And so, the battle began.

Tekkamon immediately got into position and used some sort of status buffing move that the boy hadn't seen before.

This seemed to have powered up the small Digimon significantly as it was moving much faster and struck very hard.

Metalgreymon had to tank a few hits but his iron hard defense fortunately was good enough to block most of Tekkamon's attacks.

That Digimon used a few techniques that the duo had never encountered before so they had to be extra careful.

However, a few attacks later, Metalgreymon managed to seal the deal with a devastating Buster Dive. Tekkamon went down.

Even though the hostile Digimon seemed to be knocked unconscious, it was still grinning like nothing had happened.

"This sure is creepy, I wonder what's up with this guy", the boy worried before tending to his partner Digimon.

That's when he noticed that Metalgreymon had mastered a new technique. The status increasing move also known as Full Potential.

Metalgreymon had observed Tekkamon closely and managed to pick up this useful supporting technique.

The boy knew that his Digimon partner could only apply three active moves, therefore he told him to ditch the Megaton Punch for now so he could focus on Full Potential instead.

Then, out of nowhere, the Tekkamon just disappeared in thin air which left the duo even more confused than they already were.

"I don't have time to worry about this strange Digimon now", the boy emphasized. "We have to find Myotismon fast!"

They entered the door and luckily for them, it was a real one this time, and found themselves in some sort of underground laboratory.

The ground and walls were covered with an undisclosed matter that seemed to have a slimy texture. However, the boy surely didn't want to make sure of that by wildly touching this unknown substance. He also noticed a few cages around with one of them being locked.

"Why is this one locked?", he wondered. That's when he spotted somebody inside the cage. "Wait, that's Myotismon and one of his servants!"

Indeed, Myotismon and one of his Bakemon servants were trapped inside the cage, down and out.

"What happened here?", the boy questioned. However, he had no time to think, he had to progress and eliminate the potential threat that awaited them deeper in the lab.

"I will come back as soon as I can and free you from this cage!", he promised his friend, Myotismon. The duo kept following the path that led to the center of the underground lab. The walls here were entirely covered by that slimy matter and the further they walked, the thicker the air got.

The boy also noticed some bone fragments on the floor. The further he walked, the more seemed to be spread all over the ground.

That's when he spotted something curled up in the back of the room near the central control unit.

It was a large creature made entirely from bones.

"This gives me the creeps", the boy muttered. "Is it alive?"



When the duo approached the boney creature, it suddenly started moving and unbending. A truly frightful sight - a Digimon made entirely out of bones that resembled the skeleton of a Greymon or Metalgreymon.

The boy recalled seeing a skull similar to this one's hanging from the walls in OGREMON's fortress.

Who or what was this creature?

The monster started talking all of a sudden.

"You, human and Metalgreymon!", it barked. "Don't you know me? I'm Skullgreymon. I've been wanting to play with you!"

The boy was shocked. "H-how do you know us? And what do you mean by playing with us?"

"I'll attack!", Skullgreymon followed up. This Digimon seemed to have no reason whatsoever. It was purely wired to destroy.

And so, a gruesome battle began that couldn't have been avoided.

But the boy knew that he had to pull through in order to save Myotismon.

Skullgreymon charged at Metalgreymon at full force but Metalgreymon managed to block the massive Digimon's attacks with his metal arm. Skullgreymon's bones however, seemed to be just as hard as metal so the duo couldn't afford to underestimate the destructive power of that monster.

Metalgreymon managed to use his new buffing technique Full Potential and his movements became significantly faster upon doing so.

His All Range Beam sliced off some of Skullgreymon's boney body parts which only seemed to anger the large creature even more.

Skullgreymon bombarded Metalgreymon with a bunch of Buster Dives and there seemed to be no stopping in sight. That Digimon didn't look like it was getting exhausted at all.

"I don't think this guy has infinite stamina!", the boy theorized. "We have to be smart and hit it with a counterattack!"

Just as Skullgreymon directed another Buster Dive at its opponent, Metalgreymon managed to pull off a perfect dodge, countering with a Buster Dive of his own that hit Skullgreymon in the back.

Some sort of missile was attached to his back and that also seemed to be its weak spot as Skullgreymon screamed in pain.

"I don't know how but it looks like that missile is also part of its body!", the boy realized.

That's when his partner focused all of his attacks on that part and this proved to be the key to success.

Metalgreymon landed a devastating Giga Destroyer and Skullgreymon's bones literally fell apart resulting in the heroes' victory.

"I'll attack you", Skullgreymon screamed as it collapsed in a heap - nothing left other than a pile of bones. Life seemed to have been sucked right out of them.

"What a strange battle", the boy said. "But you did it, buddy! I'm proud of you!"

Metalgreymon looked back at his tamer, still trying to hide that he was completely out of it.

The heroic Digimon might have reached the end of the road but he tried his best to carry on for as long as possible.

Shortly after, the bone pile mysteriously crumbled into dust, disappearing entirely.

"Let's just get out of here", the boy suggested. "This place gives me the creeps. Time to rescue Myotismon!"

Metalgreymon agreed and slowly limped behind his partner.



Back in the previous room, the boy found a mechanism to open the cage that had Myotismon trapped. "Myotismon, wake up!", he yelled. "We're here to save you!" The weakened Digimon opened his eyes and looked up at the heroic duo. "Y-you guys?", he muttered. "Where am I? What happened?" Myotismon sounded all confused and not fully there yet. "Slow now!", the boy said. "Let's get you up first."

He helped Myotismon up and he seemed to be doing much better within a matter of moments, slowly regaining his composure.

"I don't understand what happened", Myotismon worried. "I was just working on my research, assembling bones and..."

"And?", the boy intercepted.

"I don't remember anything that happened after that."

"It was Devimon!", the boy explained. "We met in the entrance hall. He's a real bad guy!"

"Devimon?", Myotismon wondered. "I've known him for a very long time. Yes, he's a prankster but to go to such lengths and try to sabotage my research like that? He could have ended my life!"

"From the looks of it, he might also have been brainwashed like your other men!", the boy theorized. "Similar to that Tekkamon we saw standing guard outside this room!"

Myotismon's eyes got larger.

"So you saw a Tekkamon guarding the door? Wherever these Digimon show up, something bad happens but I'm not quite sure why. However, during my research, I recall reading a book that presented an interesting theory about them. I'm not even sure why a book in my library mentioned them in the first place but maybe that library surely holds some more secrets to what's happening on the island right now. Tekkamon, Digimon said to have been created artificially about 80 years ago to destroy programs, in opposition to the Net Keeper Giromon. So, it looks like the evil mastermind behind all the island's troubles is also the one who artificially created Tekkamon using Giromon as a prototype. Now, I sure hope that the Net Keeper Giromon is doing okay. He is the one who keeps the all important factory in Factorial Town up and running. But one thing still bothers me about all this. Who or what has the ability to artificially create Digimon to use them for their evil purposes and what are they trying to achieve? This topic was also part of my year-long research but I haven't found an answer yet. We have to find out who's behind all of this"

"That's my goal and that's why we are gathering Digimon in the city!", the boy pointed out. "We have to unite our strength in order to make a difference. Do you believe me now?"

"Yes, yes", Myotismon admitted. "You are absolutely right. I will help you, just, let me make things right by finishing this research project the right way, hehe."

The boy looked at Myotismon, wondering what he meant.

"My disciple, Skullgreymon, he's not all bad. Devimon sabotaged my project but I can fix it. Just wait at the arena and he'll be there! And who knows, maybe he will be the new mega star of the city's tournaments? Oh, and I will also be there from time to time, as promised. Let's find the root of all evil, together!"

And with those words, the Grey Lord's Mansion's mysteries have been solved, at least most of them. Myotismon was saved and the heroic duo could focus on what was ahead...

Or so they thought...



## Chapter Fourteen

The boy and Metalgreymon were about to make their way out of the mansion, to explore the island further, however that's when Metalgreymon collapsed all of a sudden.

He had been trying to hide this condition for the longest time now but it was impossible for him to move on.

The boy heard the thud of his partner's body hitting the floor behind him. He turned around, shocked at what he saw.

"Buddy? hey buddy!", he panicked. "What's wrong my dear friend? What happened?"

He didn't know what to do. This came so unexpectedly, at least in his mind.

In reality, the signs were there.

Him and Metalgreymon had been together for a long time already, in Digital World time that is.

Metalgreymon has turned old and has reached the end of his life span.

Of course, the boy didn't have any experience with such a thing, nor did he know when or how his Digimon partner would eventually pass away.

But here they were.

Metalgreymon looked up at his partner as if he tried to say: "don't cry for me. We had a grand adventure, just carry on for my sake, please."

The boy could almost hear these words in his head as his eyes teared up. He sank to his knees and covered his Digimon partner's face with his entire body - then started to cry uncontrollably.

Metalgreymon's body slowly dissolved into small light particles.

First slowly, then faster and faster until nothing but a few light fragments were left.

Would the adventure end here?

The boy still hadn't reached his goal of saving File Island, there was still so much left to do.

But how would he be able to continue now?

He began blaming himself for not noticing the symptoms earlier.

Could it have turned out differently, had he paid more attention? Then again, how would he even prevent his partner's death from old age?

Still in tears, the boy, almost instinctively, pulled out an Autopilot, squeezing it firmly in one of his hands, while holding his Digimon partner's remains in the other hand.

The Autopilot showed its effect and he was transported back to File City...alone, for the first time since arriving in this world.

A feeling of sheer emptiness overcame him and he was just kneeling there, in front of Jijimon's house - that's where the Autopilot teleported him.

Jijimon heard the sobbing outside of his home and stepped outside, only to find the crying boy there.

He convinced him to come inside and tried to comfort him.

"You had a real adventure but it seems that Metalgreymon has dissipated", Jijimon explained. "But don't you worry. A Digimon's death isn't forever!"

That's when the boy looked up at Jijimon, wiping the overflowing tears from his cheeks.

"What did you say?", he asked.

"See the light particles in your hand?", Jijimon elaborated, pointing his staff at the boy's firmly closed hand. "There is a reason they haven't entirely disappeared. Your partner used his last strength to give birth to a Digitama that carries over all of his learned techniques and skills. Soon he will be reborn as



a baby Digimon.”

“That means, I get to...”, the boy said before Jijimon interrupted him.

“Start over? Yes, exactly that.”

He cheered up for a moment but then reverted back to worrying.

“But that means I have to start all over again. And will the new Digimon even remember anything?”

“Unfortunately, that’s unlikely”, Jijimon honestly admitted. “I’m sure all of your adventures are still stored somewhere deep in his heart, but most likely he won’t have any direct memory of it. But I’m sure you will become great friends just like before and grow an even stronger bond!”

The boy dusted off his pants and got up.

“You’re right, I will do my best to raise a strong Digimon partner so we can save this island. I still haven’t finished my task and I will see it through to the end!”

That’s when the light particles began glowing even brighter, starting to move on their own. They swirled around until they changed shape into some sort of egg.

“Here it is, the Digitama your partner has given birth to”, Jijimon explained.

And suddenly, the egg stopped glowing and what appeared in front of the boy and Jijimon was a Digimon egg with pink dots.

Just a few moments later, the egg began hatching and out came a small, hairy Digimon by the name of Yuramon.

The Digimon spotted the boy and immediately flew closer to him, right into his arms.

“See?”, Jijimon laughed. “It already took a liking to you!”

The boy started crying again, however this time he cried happy tears.

“A new beginning, huh?”, he said. “I will not disappoint you, Yuramon!”

Yuramon let out a happy squeak and released some bubbles.

The boy had to start over with his reborn partner but at least his adventures would continue.

Yuramon was floating around, exploring their immediate surroundings just like a newborn would.

Judging from the look on their face however, the baby Digimon seemed to recall quite a bit from their former life in File City.

That gave the boy all the more reason to believe that his Digimon partner might regain their memories eventually. But for now, he had to take good care of them, raise them properly and avoid any battles with other Digimon.

He walked outside Jijimon’s house to collect the daily meat rations and that’s when the boy noticed that the meat farm had massively grown in size.

It was now surrounded by a large metal fence, protecting the farm from potential burglars who might sneak into File City at night.

The quality of the meat also seemed to have vastly improved.

Vegiemon, who the duo recruited back in Tropical Jungle, was waiting for them by the fields.

“Well, if it isn’t our vegetable lover!”, Vegiemon greeted the boy. “Step closer and see for yourself. I have used all my knowledge and skill to grow the meat farm even further. I want to bring out its full potential and that’s why from now on, I will give you three pieces of this juicy Sirloin every day!”

The boy’s eyes sparkled.

The last time he had seen a piece of meat like that was in Myotismon’s banquet hall.

He thanked Vegiemon and was about to leave when the plant-Digimon explained another one of their new services.

“I am also selling vegetables that will boost your training results, wanna take a look?”



Vegiemon pulled out a basket filled with special food items that promised great results when consumed before training units.

The Super Carrot and the Hawk Radish.

The boy recalled one of those items.

He remembered that the Super Carrot was on the item trader Mojyamon's wishlist so he immediately purchased a couple of them.

One for trading and the other ones to use for training. He also grabbed some Hawk Radishes, thanked Vegiemon and walked towards the item shop.

Vegiemon yelled after them: "go and buy something in the item shop with your new born Digimon, you won't regret it, hehe."

The boy wondered what the Digimon meant but he would find out soon enough.

Upon entering the item shop, he noticed a second sales advisor next to Monochromon.

It was Piximon who had just moved to the city!

"Hey guys", Piximon greeted them. "You're lucky to find me here. I'm actually quite lazy so I'm not around often. But I am selling you something worth your while. The sensational Training Manual! An item unlike any other! Follow the instructions and your Digimon's training results will be off the charts, you won't regret it!"

"That sounds amazing", the boy celebrated. "How much does it cost me?"

"Glad you asked", Piximon smiled. "For you my friends, it's only a mere 50.000 Bits."

The boy's jaw virtually dropped to the floor. "Is this some kind of joke?"

"It is worth every Bit, trust me", Piximon underlined.

In fact, due to the large amount of recently won battles, the boy had gathered quite the impressive amount of bits and was able to afford this rare item. But such a purchase would deeply cut into his finances so he had to think about it for a bit.

In the end, he agreed and purchased the Training Manual.

"I hope I won't regret this", he muttered.

"Thanks for your business", Piximon celebrated. "I promise, you will have zero regrets!"

And just like that, the pink Digimon disappeared in the back of the store.

Then, the boy took care of his initially planned regular item purchases and that's when Monochromon gave him a friendly discount due to Yuramon's current level.

"Oh, so that's what Vegiemon was referring to", the boy realized. "Thanks for the discount!"

And so, the item bag was filled with useful things and Yuramon was ready to grow bigger and train to the best of their abilities.

The duo went straight to the Green Gym and rotated through each of the devices, making use of the training boosters as well as the Training Manual. To the boy's surprise, these items really showed their positive effects and Yuramon quickly grew stronger.

After six hours of training, Yuramon suddenly stopped.

The light of Digidivolution emerged from their tiny body as they let out a squeaky sound.

The boy was watching on and just like that, Yuramon had undergone their first Digidivolution turning into the In-Training-level Digimon known as Tanemon.

"Congratulations, little one!", the boy celebrated with a smile on his face.

Tanemon hopped around happily, then asked for some food.

"Oh, of course, here you go", the boy said as he rewarded his partner's hard work with a delicious Sirloin.

It was night-time already so the duo paid Jijimon a visit again and rested there until morning.





Jijimon proudly looked at the newly evolved Digimon as well as the boy.  
“I knew he would come around and do his best, even after this personal loss”, Jijimon was thinking before also taking a nap.

The next day, the boy remembered that he wanted to organize his item collection at Agumon’s Item Bank.

He knew he had to get an overview and assemble all the items requested by the collector Mojyamon. That’s when he noticed that he had gathered quite the amount of status enhancing chips.

If he used these on his Digimon, he wouldn’t have to train as much.

However, he decided to leave them stowed away for now, until his Digimon partner grew a little bigger.

He spent the next couple of days trying to complete the requested item list from Mojyamon to be able to satisfy the friendly yeti-Digimon.

He went through the notes he took and tried to figure out how to get his hands on the items he was missing.

The items he already had in his possession were the *Digi-Mushroom*, a *Super Carrot*, a *Happy Mushroom*, *Giant Meat*, a *Highspeed Disk* and a *Medium Recovery*.

He had yet to acquire a *Black Trout*, a *Digi-Anchovy* as well as an *Omnipotent* but the latter was offered by one of the Mojyamon in return for a *Super Carrot*.

That means, he only had to go fishing to be able to complete the item list.

The boy’s eyes were glowing and he was shaking with excitement.

It really has been a long time since he last went fishing back in the human world.

He told Tanemon about his fishing experience and the small, green Digimon just looked on happily.

They barely understood what their tamer was talking about but they were simply happy to see him cheer up like this.

And so, the duo made their way to the best fishing spot on File Island, Dragon-Eye Lake.

Thankfully the lake wasn’t too far from the city. Just a short walk from Native Forest and there they were.

The weather was nice and sunny and the waters were calm.

No hostile Digimon was around and the boy was getting his fishing rod ready.

He spotted a blackboard that explained how to use a fishing rod but that wasn’t something he needed to learn so he decided to get right to it.

Just as he approached the waters, he heard a strange sound from behind.

“Tanemon? Was that you?”, he wondered. He took extra caution now whenever his Digimon partner showed the tiniest sign of abnormal behavior.

In fact, Tanemon was swaying back and forth on their small legs, looking groggy.

But before the boy could even get to them, a familiar light emerged from their body.

He looked on, relieved that his Digimon partner wasn’t sick - it was simply time to digivolve again.

Since he started out with a Rookie-level at first, he wasn’t familiar with these fast back to back Digivolutions.

The light got brighter and the Digimon made more squeaking sounds.

And there he was, the boy’s new Digimon partner had become a Rookie-level Digimon.

“It’s Betamon!”, he yelled with excitement! “Don’t tell me that’s because we are near the lake?”

His new partner was an amphibian Digimon that walks on four legs - mostly green skinned with a red extremity on his back that looked like a mohawk.

Betamon is a gentle and docile creature, but sometimes it will get angry and unleash an electric shock.



The small Digimon greeted his partner with a big smile and curiously walked around in circles. Things were really looking up for the heroes lately and that was much needed after the recent crisis they had to overcome.

And so, the boy checked his backpack for suitable lures to attract the fish he was looking for. He started off with regular meat that he had purchased in the item shop. "Okay, so we need to find a *Digi-Anchovy* and a *Black Trout*", he repeated in his head while casting the Amazing Rod for the first time. He was instantly surprised by how easy it was to handle and how far the line went. "Oh, maybe that's a bit too far", he laughed as the lure landed in an area with giant fish silhouettes swimming around. "I don't think anchovies are that large!" He reeled in the line a little and placed the lure near some smaller silhouettes.

Not even a minute passed and a fish was already nibbling at the piece of meat. The bobber sunk and it was time to reel it in. "A bite!", he yelled. "Careful now, slow and steady." The boy had incredibly good control of the rod, a testament to his skill and after a few seconds he successfully caught his first digi-fish. *A Digi-Anchovy*, just as intended!

Next, he looked for slightly bigger silhouettes that could potentially be *Black Trouts*. He knew they weren't as small as anchovies. Not too far from the initial fishing spot he noticed a small amount of silhouettes and so he cast a line once again using a new piece of meat. This time, he waited around for several minutes, however no fish wanted to bite. He then reeled it in and cast the line once again, trying to place it closer to the target fish.

A few minutes passed again and then, a nibble! "Yes, I got one!", the boy shouted. "Okay, this one seems to be much more powerful, I have to make sure that my line doesn't tear." And so, he carefully tried to reel in this bigger fish which proved to be a tough challenge indeed. "This is almost like a Digimon battle except I'm fighting this time", he laughed. "Okay, focus now!"

After a little back and forth, the fishing battle was won and the boy successfully caught yet another fish.

"Wow, it's actually a *Black Trout*!", he realized. "That was so much fun, I think I want to spend some more time here and catch a few more fish for fun."

Betamon watched on while taking a nap in the warm sands.

He looked genuinely happy to see his tamer with this much passion.

And with that, several hours passed as the boy used up almost all of his food items to catch some more fish.

He didn't even notice that the sun was already about to set and so the duo went back to File City to take a rest.

The upcoming days passed in a similar manner, the boy focused entirely on collecting items, catching fish and resting up while carelessly neglecting his Digimon partner training.

Betamon didn't seem to mind but at the same time, he didn't know any better. He was still a young Digimon without much life experience.

The boy seemed to rely a little too much on the status chips he had stored at Agumon's bank - he would use them later on and Betamon would become much stronger - however, only training one's Digimon partner with items, couldn't possibly be the best way of increasing their strength and abilities.



A good balance between training, battling and smart item usage were required - but the boy was still a little too hesitant when it came to battling.

In his mind, the risk was not worth the reward and he didn't want to put Betamon through unnecessary pain.

Quite the change of heart compared to his former mindset.

Jijimon was a little worried when he heard that the boy was only collecting items and fishing all day long and so he requested a one-on-one meeting at dawn.

The two talked for a while and the boy tried to express his thoughts and feelings.

He knew he became more hesitant but that was due to the recent passing of his partner but he also acknowledged the fact that he had to change and get better in order to save the island.

That was what Jijimon tried to emphasize and so the two kept talking almost all night while Betamon was sleeping soundly next to them.

"Okay, it's settled, I will stop slacking!", the boy decided. "I don't want to hang behind. My Digimon partner needs experience and that he can only get outside the city!"

"I'm glad we see eye to eye again", Jijimon confirmed. "Now you should also rest up!"

And so the boy got comfortable next to his Digimon partner and soon the next morning would come.

Betamon was already up and the boy hadn't noticed that the friendly Digimon seemed to be in discomfort. He looked quite upset and was walking around in circles.

The boy slowly opened his eyes and noticed the strange behavior by his partner.

"What's this now, Betamon? Are you okay?"

But Betamon wasn't okay, in fact, he seemed to be in pain but it wasn't clear if it was physical or psychological pain.

Then, without any prior warning, Betamon stopped and to the boy's surprise, the light of Digivolution emerged from his body.

"A Digivolution? Now?", he wondered. "How can this be, usually it happens under different circumstances. Did I do something wrong?"

A horrifying shout came from the ever-glowing light particles as the Digimon slowly changed his shape.

Jijimon, who also just got up, came in to see what the ruckus was about.

As the boy and him stood there, they both couldn't believe their eyes.

"What?", the boy yelled. "What has become of you, buddy?"

A slimy grease emanated from the Digimon's body as green mucus kept pouring out.

The air turned thick and an unpleasant smell was flooding the room.

"Oh no", was the only thing the boy could say at that time. He was at a loss for words.

His lovely, friendly Digimon partner had made it to his Champion-level but it wasn't what anyone would have expected.

The boy's new Digimon partner was now a Numemon, the green, slimy turd-throwing Digimon.

The big round eyes, mounted on antennae, were examining the boy as the long tongue was hanging from his mouth.

"Was this because I didn't train you well enough?", the boy wailed. "I don't want to be biased but how could I ever develop the same kind of friendship I had with Greymon with a Digimon like this? But then again, this is my own fault after all."

The boy turned around for a second and sunk into a state of deep thoughts.



Meanwhile, Jijimon asked the duo to please leave his house as the unpleasant smell of Numemon was too much, even for the elder's nose.

"Please don't take it personally", he explained. "It's just..." he stopped and pointed his staff at Numemon who was just moving around in circles without a care in the world.

The boy took his Digimon partner to the meat farm where Vegiemon greeted them.

The plant-Digimon didn't seem to mind Numemon's presence at all and instead offered the duo their daily Sirloin rations.

"Do you have any clue what I might have done wrong, Vegiemon?", the boy asked, hoping for some advice like earlier.

"What do you mean?", Vegiemon responded. "Is Numemon all that bad? Why so negative?"

The boy squinted. "Maybe Vegiemon is right", he thought to himself. "Maybe I need a change of perspective? Okay, let me think, what good can become of this situation? I mean, this Digimon doesn't look like it's going to be a good fighter but haven't we been to places where he could be of some use at least?"

That's when it dawned on him.

He remembered - the one place where they couldn't find any clues at all.

The house that had this ominous, yellow bear costume that Metalgreymon was too large to wear.

Maybe Numemon was the perfect fit for that costume? He certainly had good chances given the fact he didn't even have a spine.

"It's at least worth a try", the boy convinced himself and turned to Numemon who looked hungry.

"Ready to go on a trip? Well, after you have eaten?"

Numemon flapped his tongue and sprayed quite some saliva onto his surroundings, then jumped up in the air spreading some of his slime on the farm's fence.

"Don't worry, Vegiemon, I will clean that up later", the boy explained as Vegiemon watched on skeptically.

Numemon gobbled up a total of three large pieces of Sirloin before finally being full and then looked incredibly sleepy in the process.

"No time to sleep now, we have places to go!", the boy encouraged his sluggish partner.

"I have an idea, let's just take Birdramon's air taxi, that way we won't have to walk so far!"

The boy quickly stopped by at Agumon's Item Bank, loaded his backpack with the status enhancement chips and dragged his Digimon partner towards the flying taxi.

Numemon didn't seem to know or care what was happening around him, instead he just kept breathing and occasionally tongue-searching his own teeth for food leftovers.

"Okay, I'm not going to get much of a reaction from this guy, I'll just drag him along with me", the boy realized.

And so, they visited Birdramon in its office and took an air ride to Misty Trees, the closest location to the mysterious Toy Town that was housing the bear costume.

Birdramon had a hard time carrying the slimy Numemon in particular - in the end it simply grabbed the green Digimon by his large eyes - that must have been painful.

But as always, Numemon didn't even seem to care.

A short while later, the duo had arrived in Misty Trees.

They used Cherrymon as a waypoint so that's where Birdramon dropped them off before flying back to the city.

"Okay buddy, we're on our own again", the boy turned to his partner. "Let's get this done - and I hope we didn't come here for nothing."



They quickly made their way to Toy Town, greeted Cherrymon on the way, and headed straight for the Costume House.

"Please, this has to work", the boy prayed.

And there it was, the costume that looked like it was staring them down menacingly.

They walked up to it and just like last time, it fell to the ground, revealing the zipper on the back.

"Alright, Numemon, now's your turn!", the boy encouraged his partner Digimon.

Numemon suddenly changed his behavior, looking all determined, moving closer to the costume as if he was drawn to it.

He effortlessly slipped through the opening in the back and the boy closed the zipper.

"It fits!", he yelled! "And, now what?"

He wondered what would happen since his Numemon was now simply a Numemon in a fancy costume.

But he wouldn't have to wait long and the light of Digivolution emerged from the costume.

"Yes, I think it really worked", the boy celebrated as he watched on.

The costume with Numemon inside magically stood up vertically.

More and more light particles began glowing.

When the light died down, an all new Digimon was standing before the hero.

It looked pretty much exactly like the mysterious costume but it was a living, breathing Digimon.

The Ultimate-level, Monzaemon was born!

Monzaemon was hopping up and down with joy and seemed to be happy to be around his human partner.

"You're my new Digimon partner, Monzaemon", the boy told him. "Let's become friends and do our best to finally save this island, shall we?"

Monzaemon kept hopping around joyfully, quietly however, he was a plush toy after all.

"I guess this needs some getting used to", the boy sighed.

---

## **Chapter Fifteen**

Before checking the other houses in Toy Town for any new signs of life, the boy had to make sure that his new Digimon partner was equipped with proper battling techniques.

He focused mainly on pure damaging moves and told Monzaemon to use Megaton Punch and Buster Dive when battling.

Monzaemon understood instantly and looked ready for any upcoming battles.

The boy was surprised at his partner's determination despite his docile appearance.

"Never judge a book by its cover", he laughed.

That was especially true for Monzaemon.

To complete their preparations, the boy used up all of his status enhancement items to increase Monzaemon's skills and strength significantly.

"Okay buddy", the boy encouraged his partner. "Whoever we are dealing with, we will take care of them!"



And so the duo exited the Costume House, searching Toy Town for any clues. That's when the boy heard a sound coming from the Robot House that was right across the main square.

"Did you hear that, too?", he asked his partner Digimon. Monzaemon nodded and the heroes walked up to the building.

"I can sense some movement inside", the boy mentioned.

As they entered, they saw the previously lifeless robot dolls move around hysterically. Something must have happened.

Once they spotted Monzaemon at the entrance their movements became even wilder and more uncontrollable.

They produced loud, static robot sounds and seemed to be excited to see Monzaemon appear in front of them.

"Hey, what's wrong you guys?", the boy asked.

"Tinmon, we are Tinmon", one of them responded in a voice that sounded quite, well, robotic.

"Monzaemon, is this really you? You have to help us, Warumonzaemon kidnapped our friend!"

The boy looked at them as confused as ever.

Did he hear them right?

Do they know Monzaemon?

And who in the world was Warumonzaemon?

He tried to calm them down by talking to them.

"This is a Monzaemon, yes. But that's not the Monzaemon that you guys seem to know!"

Tinmon looked at the boy and reacted: "but isn't this a Monzaemon?"

"Well, yes!", the boy had to admit.

"Then, please help us", Tinmon begged. "Only Monzaemon can stand up to Warumonzaemon. Please help us retrieve our kidnapped friend!"

Of course, the boy couldn't just ignore their cries for help, especially when it seemed like something unjust had gone down in this place.

"Okay, okay, we will try and find that friend of yours and defeat this evil Warumonzaemon that you mentioned", the boy proclaimed.

"Thank you, I will unlock the Toy Mansion's main gate, it's right next door", Tinmon explained.

"Oh no, yet another mansion, huh?", the boy was thinking.

But this wasn't the time to complain.

These alarmed Digimon really needed their help and only the heroic duo was able to pull it off.

And so, they left the Robot House and walked over to the Toy Mansion.

They had been here before but simply couldn't find a way to open the massive gate in the entrance hall, however this time, it just magically popped open by itself, allowing the duo to enter.

They walked up some stairs made entirely from building blocks, just like the rest of the floor and as soon as they arrived upstairs, they were met by three Rookie-level Digimon, staring them down.

"Even the Digimon in here look like toys?", the boy wondered. "What's going on here?"

The Digimon in question were called Toyagumon, a subspecies of Agumon that the boy of course knew very well.

He didn't try to dodge the Digimon, instead he wanted to test Monzaemon's fighting skills and so he challenged the trio to a battle.

The Toyagumon were just standing there, not making a sound, however, once the battle started, they bombarded Monzaemon with Magma Bombs.





Monzaemon didn't even flinch and blocked their attacks like a champion, striking back with powerful Buster Dives, taking out one by one in record time.

"Wow", the boy gaped. He just stood there, utterly impressed by his Digimon partner's battling skills and power. "I guess that's the power of an Ultimate-level Digimon."  
The fight lasted shorter than it took them to climb the stairs, very impressive indeed.

However, once the Toyagumon ran away and the room was empty, the next obstacle presented itself. The duo was standing in front of not one, not two, but three doors with each of them having a giant question mark painted on them.

What was that supposed to mean? Did they just have to randomly try which door would open? The boy looked for some sort of hidden lever or button to open the correct door but to no avail.

"I guess we'll just knock on each of them and see if they open?", he then suggested.

The duo walked up to the first door on the far left and knocked.

A sound rang out, sounding like a jingle from one of these quiz shows, the boy knew from the television.

The same sound that rang when a question had been wrongly answered.

"Does that mean we guessed wrong?", he pondered. That's when something fell from above.

It took a direct course towards the duo's heads.

A solid metal tub hit them both in the head at full force.

The heroes were knocked down.

"Ouch, what the?", the boy cursed. "I guess that's what happens when we guess wrong? Wow, what a childish way of punishing us. Looks like this Warumonzaemon is a real jerk."

He kept complaining about the trap while walking up to the next door, the one in the middle.

He carefully knocked and immediately took a step back, hoping to not get hit again in case he guessed wrong. But this time, the door opened instantly, presenting them with yet another staircase that led upwards.

"Gotcha!", the boy shouted. "Come on, buddy, let's get out of here quickly!"

Monzaemon, who seemed unfazed by the hit to his head, followed his tamer at every turn.

The next room had another set of Digimon waiting for the heroes.

Two mean-looking Tankmon, waiting to throw down with the duo.

Their aggressive demeanor and rugged bodies made for a frightening encounter but Monzaemon, as per usual, seemed entirely unimpressed.

The two Tankmon rolled towards Monzaemon at full speed using their road wheels, but the squishy Digimon had already charged his Buster Dive and knocked them both back at a moment's notice.

Both Tankmon got up and barked at their opponent. They surely didn't expect such a harmless Digimon to hit that hard.

"Looks like this is our secret weapon", the boy muttered. "Monzaemon's unthreatening appearance makes most enemies drop their guard and we will take advantage of that for sure!"

A few moments later, Monzaemon had also disposed of the Tankmon who scrambled out of there instantly.

And once again, the duo found themselves in front of three mystery doors, having to guess the right one in order to progress.

This time, the boy let chance decide. He closed his eyes, turned around a few times and pointed straight ahead.

When he opened his eyes, his finger was pointing at the door on the far right



He walked up, knocked and braced for potential impact.

But instead, the door magically opened.

"Yes, score!", he once again celebrated and the two didn't waste a single second walking up those stairs further.

Another similar looking room was awaiting them and in there three more opponents.

They looked like Toyagumon, however they were kind of transparent.

The Digimon also known as Clearagumon didn't seem to be up for a battle, at least they didn't look too threatening or willing to fight.

The boy decided to ignore the bunch and sneak past them as the battle result would be similar to before.

His focus was on finding the correct door among the three.

He tried the door in the center first, however that one was a failure.

Luckily, this time they were prepared for the falling object and managed to block the hit quite well.

"This is really getting old fast", the boy complained. "This Warumonzaemon must be fun at parties, I guess."

Next, he went for the door on the left and indeed, he guessed right this time.

The door opened and yet another staircase appeared.

The duo walked upstairs and entered an entirely new room.

"This is it!", the boy confirmed. "The final room, at least from what it looks like. Wait, what are these?"

He was referring to two gift boxes standing in the center of the room, right in front of him.

A small one and a big one.

Of course, both had question marks on them as well.

"Hehe, which one will you pick?", a threatening voice sounded out of nowhere.

"Was that Warumonzaemon?", the boy suspected. "It came from one of these gift boxes. Hmm, which one should I open?"

He thought for a second and then decided to go for the big one.

"And go!", he yelled as he opened the gift box.

Out came a toy bomb that landed in front of the duo and blew up in an instant.

"Another trap?", the boy complained. "I've really had it with you, come out now!"

"Hehe, why so serious?", the devilish voice rambled.

And suddenly, the smaller gift box opened and a teddy-like Digimon came jumping out.

"So, you are Warumonzaemon?", the boy questioned the evil-looking Digimon.

They looked like a plush teddy bear that had been through some rough patches. Their dark skin was all uneven and stitched up multiple times. On one of their hands, they had real bear claws attached which they surely didn't use for good deeds.

"Who wants to know that?", Warumonzaemon barked. "Did you come here to work for me?"

"No, you kidnapped a friend of ours and we are here to take them back!", the boy stressed.

"Kidnapped?", Warumonzaemon laughed. "Do I look like I could hurt a fly?"

"You bet!", the boy yelled.

"Darn it, you're right again", Warumonzaemon grunted. "I guess I will have to silence you both then, but it's nothing personal, just my business, okay?"

"Get ready, Monzaemon", the boy calmly said. He was determined to put a stop to this fiend's evildoings.

Monzaemon got in position and was met with an overwhelmingly agile Warumonzaemon who used their Buster Dive in a creative way, spinning around fast and pointing that sharp bear claw at the heroic Digimon.



Monzaemon managed to block this devastating attack as sparks were flying. He then countered with one of his own and knocked Warumonzaemon back.

The evil teddy looked anything but pleased and changed their strategy. They rubbed their hands together and summoned an incredibly dangerous lightning attack.

One of the most powerful moves known in the Digital World, called Thunder Justice. Monzaemon took a devastating blow and got knocked down for a brief moment. Thankfully, his skin was somewhat lightning-proof which helped him survive this otherwise deadly attack. He made sure to pay close attention to Warumonzaemon's way of summoning this technique, in hopes of acquiring it for himself.

Meanwhile, the boy supported his partner by providing a bunch of status buffing items. Warumonzaemon turned out to be quite the stamina monster but so was Monzaemon. The two were almost evenly matched but there was a decisive difference between them. While Warumonzaemon kept lining up attack after attack, Monzaemon took a more strategic approach and cleverly bided his time to charge up his ultimate attack, the Lovely Attack.

The heroic Digimon waited for the right moment and brilliantly dodged one of Warumonzaemon's Thunder Justice attacks, then fired off the powerful Lovely Attack, a homing shot with a rotating, pink heart filled with energy - the perfect technique to finish off a dirtbag like Warumonzaemon. A clean hit and Warumonzaemon stumbled backwards, took a 360-degree spin and landed flat on their belly.

The battle was won. The duo celebrated as they approached Warumonzaemon attempting to search their body for the kidnapped friend. Meanwhile, it looked like Monzaemon was successful in learning the powerful Thunder Justice technique from watching his opponent use it multiple times. With that, Monzaemon would now be even more powerful and dangerous, to the delight of both heroes. Shortly after, the bad guy woke up and quickly crawled into a corner, away from the duo.

"W-who are you guys?", Warumonzaemon stuttered in fear after fully realizing what had just gone down. "Give back the friend!", the boy demanded. "Okay, okay", the evil teddy responded. "Here you go." What they handed the boy was instead another prank - a toy bomb that went off again.

The boy took a step back, anticipating the trap.

"I've had it with you", he cursed. "Give yourself up, return the friend and never do things like this ever again, you hear me?" Warumonzaemon looked intimidated and finally obeyed, handing the boy some sort of gear. "No more tricks I said!", he repeated. "Wait, don't you get it?", Warumonzaemon explained. "That is the friend. I promise, I didn't take anything else!"

The boy looked at the gear and bagged it. "Looks like this is really it", he muttered before turning his attention back to Warumonzaemon. "If I ever catch you pulling something like this again, you will definitely regret it!" "I promise, I won't do it again!", Warumonzaemon whined.



"I don't trust you but there are so many other things I have to take care of", the boy said as he searched the room for some more treasures that the evil teddy was hiding. After acquiring a bunch of useful items, the duo climbed down the many stairs of Toy Mansion and left the building, rushing immediately towards the Robot House. Waiting in there were the Tinmon, already aligning at some sort of mechanical console.

"Hagurumon, you're back!", one of them yelled.  
"Hagurumon, who's that?", the boy wondered.

That's when the gear in his backpack started moving on its own, inserting itself into that mechanical control unit.  
The friend was indeed not just a gear but a gear-shaped Rookie-level Digimon named Hagurumon.

Suddenly, a loud clicking sound rang out and the room went dark.  
The Tinmon huddled up and their lights started blinking uncontrollably while swaying their heads and arms back and forth.  
They started to sing a robotic sounding song that Hagurumon seemed to have triggered!

"It's an old tale. Bad guys came from far away to this island. The bad guys told Digimon: This island is ours. Digimon told them: That's not true. This island is for everybody. Because Digimon unified and challenged the bad guys, the bad guys were taught a lesson. But the bad guys said: Wait, we'll get you later....and they disappeared. It's an old tale."

"Hmm, I have a strange feeling", the boy reacted. "Oh wait, that story from the song is an old tale of this island, isn't it? About the Digimon defeating the bad guys! But I wonder who the bad guys were in the story?"

"Thanks for helping us", Tinmon said. "This is to show our gratitude."  
The robotic Digimon handed an empty Monzaemon-husk to the boy, a stuffed animal that would be a token of great courage.  
"We will hang this one in Jijimon's house", the boy suggested. "It's a symbol of unity with Toy Town and its residents!"

And with that, the duo said goodbye to the strange robot Digimon and left the Robot House. That's when they noticed that Toy Town's citizens had returned to the streets again, now that Warumonzaemon's reign of terror was finally over.  
The boy talked to a Tankmon, a Toyagumon and a Clearagumon respectively with each of them providing him with useful information.

Toyagumon told the boy about a special reward he'd receive if he ever scored ten points at Digimon Curling, something the boy wasn't all too eager to try out.  
He'd much rather go fishing all day but then again, with all the fish he caught, he could challenge Penguinmon for a large amount of games.  
For now, he just thanked the resident for their information and talked to a Tankmon who actually specialized in fishing.  
"Hey buddy", the friendly Tankmon said. "Have you ever heard of the Lake Guardian at Dragon-Eye Lake?"  
The boy was intrigued. "No, I haven't but go on please!"  
"The guardian appears in the southern part of the lake and he will only show up before noon or right before dawn. Keep that in mind!", Tankmon explained.

The boy seemed to be very interested in that particular fact and took a mental note of it.  
This knowledge surely would come in handy later on.



But for now, the duo was done with Toy Town.  
Another area's problems were solved thanks to their bravery and combined powers.

---

## **Chapter Sixteen**

As the heroes were relatively close to Freeze Land again, the boy decided to stop by for a little while to handle some unfinished business.

Just when they entered the icy area through the eastern exit of Misty Trees, the boy noticed a four-legged Digimon standing there, staring him down menacingly.

That's when it dawned on him - he promised a certain Digimon a rematch 24 hours after their initial encounter but he simply forgot to take them up on it.

Too many things happened, then Metalgreymon passed and the boy had to start over - so much so that he completely forgot to challenge Garurumon for a rematch without his interference.

But there the majestic dog-Digimon was waiting, barking at the boy.

"Hey, you're late! a bunch of days late to be exact!"

"I know, I completely forgot", the boy apologized. "We got caught up in so many other things but we're here now - will you still accept our challenge?"

Garurumon grinned. "Hehe, of course, I mean it's your fault that I am pretty much fully healed now", the Digimon laughed.

In fact, due to the long time in between their previous battle, the Champion-level Digimon had enough time to treat their injuries.

"Okay then, Monzaemon and Garurumon", the boy said. "You two fight and I will not interfere. I will only watch!"

"That's the spirit!", Garurumon yelled.

And so, the battle began.

Despite Garurumon's healed injuries, they were still no match for Monzaemon's overwhelming power. On top of that, the usually deadly Ice Statue technique from Garurumon seemed to barely affect Monzaemon due to his stuffed animal skin. The cold didn't bother him at all.

Unimpressed by anything that Garurumon threw at the teddy-Digimon, he fired back with his newly learned technique, Thunder Justice.

Two consecutive direct hits and Garurumon had enough, collapsing in front of Monzaemon's squishy feet.

"I give up, you're too strong", Garurumon admitted. "Wow, what insane power, I was no match for you and this time it was truly a fair fight. That convinced me, I will help you, but first, let me take a look at that city of yours!"

Garurumon limped away towards File City and just like that, the duo had recruited yet another citizen for their ever growing home grounds.

Now it was time to take care of yet another thing the boy had prepared for in advance.

All the items he had on him were for a specific purpose. To satisfy the Mojyamon item collectors near Freeze Land's shore.

The duo followed the path downhill to where the friendly Digimon were already waiting for them.



As soon as they arrived, one of the Mojjamon already waved at them.  
“Hey friends, it’s great to see you again. Will you trade with me?”  
“You bet”, the boy confirmed with a smile on his face as he proudly unpacked and presented the carefully collected items he brought.  
Mojjamon was bubbling over with joy and offered the boy their precious items in return.  
The boy didn’t care too much about the trade items, instead he wanted to ask one of the collectors to join File City and potentially open a shop there.

After completing every single one of Mojjamon’s requests, the last one the duo had pleased indeed offered to join the city to offer their services.  
The boy was happy to hear about their offer and gladly accepted.

And with that, there was only one more place on their Freeze Land agenda.

The mysterious Ice Sanctuary which they only saw from afar but haven’t actually entered yet.  
Since they weren’t too far from that building, the duo decided to take a short break near Penguinmon’s cave and swiftly make their way uphill again to find this enigmatic unit.

“Ice Sanctuary, huh”, the boy muttered. “I wonder what we’ll find in there. Are you ready, buddy?”

Monzaemon nodded and walked ahead.  
A new adventure awaited the heroic duo as they entered the icy halls of the Ice Sanctuary.

On their way to their new destination, they encountered a bunch of patrolling Hyogamon.  
Did they intentionally guard that place? Were they trying to hide something?  
The boy knew that something must have been going on in that structure and so he and Monzaemon snuck past the hostile Digimon and finally arrived at the Ice Sanctuary.  
They stood in front of it for a little while, completely in awe of the beauty of construction.  
It looked like it was purely made from ice and its outer design reminded the boy of a western church or cathedral even.

“Let’s not stare too long”, the boy said. “Let’s go inside and explore!”  
What he didn’t know was the fact that entry wasn’t allowed for every Digimon partner of his.  
Only for Vaccine types which luckily Monzaemon was.  
That was also the reason why Greymon wasn’t able to enter Grey Lord’s Mansion but Metalgreymon was.  
The difference in types.  
However, the boy never knew what the true reason was. But in this case, he didn’t care since he was able to enter the building without any issues.

They entered and found themselves in a large entrance hall.  
Everything was shinningly white, made from ice. Solid ice that wouldn’t break no matter what, it seemed.  
Monzaemon spotted something in the center of the room. He ran towards it and then the boy saw it, too.  
“Wow, what in the Digital World is that?”, he wondered, pointing at a detailed statue made from ice, standing on a block in the middle of the hall.  
“Looks so captivating, almost reminding me of an angel”, he pointed out.

For a second he thought he noticed some sort of movement coming from that statue or maybe it was his imagination?  
“Did you see that Monzaemon?”, he asked his partner. “I wonder if it’s alive?”



The boy kept staring but nothing happened.

He then decided to search the hall for more clues or a possible path forward. No doors or gates seemed to be nearby.

Monzaemon however kept investigating the statue, or rather the solid block it was standing on.

He noticed a light breeze coming from underneath that block and so he carefully pushed it back trying to not break the statue on top.

"Did you find something, buddy?", the boy turned around and asked.

By then, Monzaemon had already pushed back the block far enough to be able to see what was underneath.

A hidden staircase presented itself and the boy was amazed by his partner's attention to detail.

"Wow, that's awesome!", he celebrated as he slowly approached the staircase. "Let's go inside, carefully though!"

Monzaemon went ahead and squeezed his soft body through the relatively small opening he created.

As did the boy and the duo found themselves in a new room.

The pathways here were much more narrow, however this time they seemed to be leading somewhere at least.

Some Digimon were also roaming around in this basement but the duo tried to avoid any unnecessary battles.

Their main goal was to explore the sanctuary and find clues.

They walked on straight ahead and made it to another room much deeper inside.

However, other than a few icy training machines they didn't find anything else in there.

The boy examined the machines carefully but ultimately decided to carry on and not waste any more time.

"Let's go back and see if we can find another path forward", he suggested.

Monzaemon happily followed his tamer. He seemed to be really fond of this place or maybe it was only due to his discovery of that secret path.

The duo examined the previous room further and noticed a path on the right that they had overlooked before.

All the icy walls made it harder to see any potential passages.

After entering the hidden door, two possible paths presented themselves.

However, before they were able to explore any of the new paths, two scrappy Digimon ran towards them at full speed.

Were they Garurumon?

No, they had a slightly different fur color. In fact, they were called Gururumon and the duo wasn't able to dodge their onslaught, so a battle began.

The two wolf-Digimon made use of icy attacks but just like the battle with Garurumon earlier, Monzaemon didn't even struggle one bit with their cold techniques.

Instead, he brushed them off like they were nothing and dealt massive damage to both of them with his Thunder Justice technique.

The battle was quickly won and the duo managed to move forward.

"What's this over there?", the boy wondered. He spotted a weird looking, floating geometrical shape.

A silverish pyramid levitating with a white light shining at it from underneath.

The boy had never seen something like that before and wondered what its purpose was.

He carefully approached the mysterious pyramid and touched it.

That's when his body suddenly started feeling so light, he couldn't even feel the ground beneath his feet anymore.



"What's going on now?", he panicked and looked back at his partner Digimon who seemed to slowly dissipate into light particles - however unlike when Metalgreymon passed away, this time it looked quite different and when he looked down on his own body, the same thing was happening to him as well.

A brief moment of silence and darkness, then the boy opened his eyes and found himself back outside in front of the Ice Sanctuary alongside his partner Monzaemon.

"D-did we just get teleported back here?", he wondered. "Now I have truly seen it all in this world."

Indeed the shining, silver pyramid was a teleporter platform that transported the duo from one point to another.

But would the destination be random or was it set?

The boy urged his partner to follow him back inside, take the stairs back down, take a right and arrive in the room with the teleporters again.

He initially took the one to his right but decided to walk straight ahead this time to test out the other teleporter platform.

He grabbed his Digimon partner's arm and moved towards the pyramid. The same phenomenon happened and the duo were teleported someplace else.

"Okay, this seems to be a new room now", the boy noticed. "I feel like I'm starting to get the hang of this!"

They found themselves in a new area that only had one way forward.

However, it was only a narrow path ahead of them and a bunch of Digimon were standing in the way, making it hard to avoid them.

The boy wasn't so successful and so Monzaemon had to fight his way through this room by defeating a number of Hyogamon as well as Gururumon.

After having dealt with these hostile Digimon, there was only one way forward, marked by yet another shining pyramid teleporter.

They both walked up to it and were once again teleported to an entirely new room.

This room however, was equipped with four different pyramid teleporters that were guarded by some Icemon - a rock solid Champion-level Digimon covered in ice.

"Okay, I assume that only one of these platforms will take us forward while the other ones will bring us back to where we came from, or what do you think?", the boy assumed.

Monzaemon looked at the four pyramids from afar and tried to spot any inconsistencies that might reveal the correct path.

He took a close look at the walls, the ground as well as the teleporter itself but what truly struck him as odd was the behavior of each of the Icemon guarding the pyramids.

While the bottom left, upper left and bottom right pyramids were guarded by stillstanding Icemon that only observed, the upper right one's guardian was frantically running around in circles.

Maybe they knew they were guarding something important and the pressure had gotten to them?

Monzaemon squinted. This truly seemed suspicious and so he gave a signal to the boy to try that upper right teleporter first.

The boy didn't seem to have a clue but he fully trusted in his partner's abilities.

After all, Monzaemon had also spotted the secret staircase in the entrance hall.

And so the duo dodged the guarding Icemon and approached the teleporter platform.

The usual light shined and both of them were carried to a whole new area.

"I think this was the right one", the boy shouted. "Great job, Monzaemon!"

His Digimon partner happily hopped around, loving the praise.



But there wasn't much time to celebrate yet as this new room was rather poky with three intimidating Digimon standing in its center.

Right behind them was a blinding white light that was shaped like a ball.

"I don't think that's another one of these teleporters", the boy suspected. "Maybe that's our target and these guys are just keeping us from reaching it?"

Monzaemon got in position as a fight seemed unavoidable.

Two Hyogamon and one Icemon were standing there, not moving one inch.

The boy picked up some items in treasure chests nearby, hoping they would come in handy and then he commanded his partner to strike first while the Digimon ahead weren't paying attention.

Monzaemon opened up with a Buster Dive to Icemon, trying to take them out quickly.

However, the three-on-one situation got messy real quick.

The constant attacks kept Monzaemon from charging up his powerful moves, instead he had to focus on blocking the enemy strikes that were battering him.

Fortunately for Monzaemon however, the tight space they were fighting in turned out to be a disadvantage for the enemies.

Many of their attacks turned into friendly fire and so the hostile Digimon slowly chipped away at each other.

Monzaemon noticed that his opponents were slowing down significantly after a while and approached them one by one, landing devastating Megaton Punches to ultimately decide the battle.

The winner was Monzaemon, overcoming even a three-on-one onslaught.

The boy celebrated with his partner as the three defeated Digimon ran away leaving only the shining, white light behind.

"Let's see what this is all about then", the boy suggested, getting ready to approach the light - Monzaemon was right behind him.

He walked up to it and carefully touched it.

That's when it began to unfold and flood the entirety of the room with a blinding, white light.

The boy had to close his eyes to not be blinded by it.

All of a sudden, a voice sounded from out of nowhere.

"He who seeks my help, the time has come! I give you the blessings of my wings."

"What the...?", the boy reacted. "Where? Whose voice?"

The light slowly dissipated until it was gone entirely.

The boy stood there more confused than before.

"What was that? The light is gone. There's nothing else here. Does that mean it's above?"

A moment of silence - what had just happened?

It took the boy a minute to regain his composure.

"Something tells me we have to leave this place now. I don't think we will find anything else in this room, buddy."

Monzaemon nodded in agreement and so the duo moved back towards the teleporter platform which transported them to the previous room with the four teleporter pyramids.

This time, their goal was to leave this place as fast as possible and so the boy blindly picked one of the teleporters hoping they would lead them to their desired location.

He randomly picked the top left pyramid and walked up to it with Monzaemon before touching it.

The teleporter carried the duo back to the entrance hall but something was different from before.



The angel statue that was gracing the room was now gone entirely!  
“Oh?”, the boy wondered. “About the statue...”

Suddenly, a winged creature appeared above.  
It looked just like an angel in humanoid form.  
White, feathered wings, a golden staff and wearing a metal helmet.

The creature slowly descended and landed right in front of the duo.  
“Phew, well”, the creature sighed.  
“You came back to life and you’re a Digimon?”, the boy asked.  
“I’m Angemon”, the holy Digimon confirmed. “An angel to protect you. I’ve awakened to fulfill my duty.”

The boy looked as confused as ever. “What’s he talking about?”

“I know the truth of heaven”, Angemon continued. “I offer my soul to follow earthly instructions.”  
“What is this all about?”, the boy asked once more. “Are you coming to the city?”  
“Thine mission is mine duty, I go!”, Angemon responded.  
“I’m sorry, but can you speak in words I understand?”, the boy requested.

“I’ll go to the city, so you must keep trying”, Angemon explained.

“Oh, I see, thanks!”, the boy said, finally understanding what this holy Digimon wanted to tell him.  
The boy tried to reconstruct all that happened in this area and came to the conclusion that some evil power - potentially the same one that had messed with other parts of the island - imprisoned Angemon in this Ice Sanctuary.  
And the heroic duo were the ones to awaken the holy Digimon from his slumber.

And so, the heroes’ adventures in Freeze Land came to an end, however, the island was still far from being saved.  
There were still too many mysteries to be uncovered and too many open questions unanswered.  
But for now, it was time to head back to File City and from there explore other parts of the island.

---

## **Chapter Seventeen**

Upon their return to File City, the duo decided to take a rest, restock some items and have a big meal in the restaurant.  
They also walked around and talked to some of the resident Digimon who encouraged them to search the surrounding Native Forest for some useful food items.  
Sometimes, rare items would appear that couldn’t be found elsewhere.  
The boy was intrigued and eager to find some of the items they mentioned.  
He took his partner and searched Native Forest for a little while.

At first, they weren’t successful in finding anything rare - most of what was laying around were simple Digi-Mushrooms.  
However, once they searched near the Digimon Bridge, the boy spotted a food item he had never seen before.  
An odd looking apple colored in blue was laying there on the floor, covered by some bushes.  
“Oh wow, look at that, buddy!”, the boy pointed out.  
Monzaemon was rather interested in that strange fruit and so the duo went ahead to pick it up.



However, just when they got closer to pick up the item, a voice sounded from out of nowhere.

“Stop where you are!”, the voice yelled.

Was this a trap laid by one of the evil guys? The boy froze and so did his Digimon partner.

They looked around but couldn’t spot anyone.

That’s when the leaves of the trees and bushes started whirling in the air.

In what looked like a small tornado, a creature was approaching the duo rapidly out of thin air.

The tornado slowed down in front of them and spinning out of it came a very small Digimon that looked like it was wearing a ninja’s outfit.

“I’m Ninjamon”, the smaller Digimon proclaimed. “I have been looking for the two of you. You’re famous even in the Byte Village. I hereby challenge you to a battle!”

The boy was surprised by their boldness, despite their very small size.

“A challenge?”, the boy responded. “You got it, we’re not backing down from any challenger, do we Monzaemon?”

Monzaemon nodded strongly, getting in position for the upcoming fight.

Ninjamon smiled, closing their eyes and taking a stance typical for Ninjas - at least judging from what the boy knew from his favorite manga and anime shows.

Before Monzaemon could even react, Ninjamon had flanked him.

The small Digimon moved at an incredible speed and managed to hit the teddy-Digimon with a Dynamite Kick from behind.

Monzaemon looked around but he had a hard time spotting the skillful ninja-Digimon.

“Wow, this guy is really talented”, the boy admitted. “Try and sense their movements and predict their strikes, buddy!”

Monzaemon confirmed and closed his eyes, standing still for a while.

He tried to use his others senses to spot Ninjamon and block their attacks.

He paid special attention to small ground tremors and rustling leaves and was able to predict Ninjamon’s strikes that way. Ninjamon tried to hit Monzaemon with another Dynamite Kick, but the cautious teddy saw the attack coming and blocked it successfully.

It worked - at least for now!

Monzaemon then hit a powerful counter blow, a Megaton Punch, knocking Ninjamon back for a second.

Ninjamon quickly shook it off however and seemed to change their strategy.

They now focused on long range techniques, bombarding Monzaemon with powerful Magma Bombs.

Monzaemon had less of a hard time dodging and blocking these types of moves and he quickly managed to adapt to his opponent’s attacking patterns.

He went for a couple of Thunder Justice strikes but Ninjamon’s evasiveness allowed them to dodge the majority of attacks.

Therefore, Monzaemon smartly adjusted his charge up timing and managed to interrupt Ninjamon’s Magma Bomb attempt with one of his Thunder Justice strikes.

“Bullseye!”, the boy shouted. “That was a phenomenal hit!”

Monzaemon seemed to have his opponent figured out and continued this strategy until Ninjamon was moving slower and slower.

He then finished the small Digimon off with a Buster Dive that blew Ninjamon away a few yards, almost landing them in the nearby river.

The battle was won and the duo celebrated while also checking on their opponent.

Ninjamon seemed to be okay and only sustained minor injuries.



"That was a good fight", the boy praised Ninjamon who looked back at the two with nothing but admiration.

"You guys are the real deal", Ninjamon responded. "It's my loss but I don't feel ashamed at all. I am happy to have had the chance of fighting you both. Listen, would you mind if I become your disciple and travel with you?"

The boy felt flattered by this offer but ultimately declined.

"I appreciate it but how about you join File City instead and use your unique power and wisdom to help us rebuild the city and save the island?"

"That's great training, too. I will be there, master!", Ninjamon confirmed.

That was probably the first time anybody called the boy master.

He was flustered for a bit but then carried on. He still wanted to check in on Shellmon's newspaper in case any new stories appeared.

Back in File City, Shellmon was already awaiting the duo, waving them over.

"A special edition just dropped, you have to read this!", Shellmon yelled.

The boy moved up and checked out the blackboard, spotting some new stories mentioning the infamous guardian of Dragon-Eye Lake that he had learned about before.

Another story got him especially interested however.

"UFO sightings?", it said. "An alien was spotted in Mt. Panorama. Humbug or is there some truth behind it? Find out in the next issue!"

The boy was intrigued. He questioned Shellmon to gather more information however Shellmon declined.

"You can't expect me to reveal my secrets before I release the news to the public!"

"I guess we won't get any answers from them", the boy sighed. "Well, let's take matters into our own hands and go exploring!"

He took Monzaemon and walked over to the area in Mt. Panorama that he remembered had strange markings on the ground.

Were they some sort of crop circles like in the movies?

Was a UFO or alien actually going to appear?

Upon arrival, the boy thoroughly searched the area but couldn't seem to find any alien around. But he did notice something odd.

The symbols on the ground had multiplied.

Some of them were even bigger than the first one and they looked unlike anything the boy had seen before.

"Let's tell Shellmon about this", the boy suggested. "Maybe they'll tell us more now that we have seen this!"

And so, the duo swiftly returned to File City trying to squeeze more information out of Shellmon who was already pinning more pamphlets to the blackboard.

Looks like they wouldn't have to interrogate the aquatic Digimon after all, a new story had just appeared in the newspaper.

"The rumors were true, an alien has been sighted at Mt. Panorama. Are they friend or foe? Stay tuned for more!", it said.

"That's it, we are going back immediately!", the boy urged his partner.

Soon after they arrived back at the designated spot, the boy noticed a strange sound that seemed to come closer and closer.





The mysterious symbols on the floor have also multiplied once more and were practically everywhere now.

Upon inspecting them, the annoying sound came even closer and then it suddenly stopped.

The boy looked up and was shocked by what appeared before his eyes.

"An alien!", he yelled. "It's really an alien!"

He tried conversing with the creature that truly looked like an alien from a different planet.

Their oversized brains were entirely exposed and the creature was sitting in some sort of UFO just floating in front of the heroes.

"Are you a Digimon?", the boy tried to ask. "We come in peace!"

The creature then pointed their laser gun at the boy who quickly raised his hands into the air.

"We don't mean any harm, I promise!", the boy tried to explain.

The alien lowered their gun again and the boy sighed in relief.

"Good, you understand", he followed up. "Look, why don't you join us in the city? Everyone is friendly there and I'm sure you would like it a lot."

"Okay", the alien suddenly responded before quickly disappearing.

"They can talk?", the boy shouted in disbelief.

The alien was in fact a Digimon from outer space named Vademon and they would join the talented chefs in File City's restaurant, offering truly galactic dishes.

"See, buddy, we can even befriend aliens", the boy laughed. "I'm absolutely positive that we can save this island, no matter what!"

Shortly after, the duo noticed a great power nearby and walked a few steps further north from their current position

And indeed, a Digimon they haven't met before appeared on the plains of Mt. Panorama.

On closer inspection however, the boy recognized the Digimon.

It was one of his favorites from his V-Pet game, the Ultimate-level Digimon also known as Mamemon.

A small, bean-like Digimon with incredible battling skills.

The tiny Digimon had already spotted the heroic duo and called out to them.

"Hey, you guys wanna battle or are you going to chicken out?" Their tone was rather provocative but the boy didn't hesitate one bit.

"We'll fight you, alright!", he confidently responded.

"Great, show me what you got, then", Mamemon yelled as they got into position.

Mamemon's battling style was similar to Ninjamon's and Piximon's in a sense.

They strategically moved around, using status buffing techniques first, before charging at Monzaemon.

The hero's Digimon partner took some bad hits but managed to bounce back, delivering some strong Megaton Punches and Buster Dives of his own.

Unfortunately for the duo, Mamemon delivered his most powerful technique, the Smiley Bomb, at full force, costing Monzaemon a large amount of energy.

The boy had to step in and provide healing for his injured partner.

Monzaemon managed to get back up and find his groove again, hitting a powerful Thunder Justice that stunned Mamemon for a few seconds.



These valuable moments were all that Monzaemon needed to charge his ultimate move, Lovely Attack, which sealed the deal.

Mamemon went down and this rough battle was won.

Similar to Ninjamon, the small Digimon offered to serve as the duo's disciple as they were too impressed by their battle skills.

The boy politely declined and instead invited Mamemon to join File City.

The bean-like Digimon happily accepted and made their way to the ever growing city of Digimon.

After celebrating their victory, the duo slowly followed the rocky pass back to Native Forest, where they decided to explore some more.

The boy remembered Tankmon's words - the Lake Guardian only appears in the late afternoon or right before noon.

Since it was high-noon, he wanted to pass some time to be able to meet the infamous guardian.

Maybe they would know something about the island's misery?

While passing some time, the boy recalled a strange looking tree that had some sort of door carved into its stem.

The door had some engravings on it that read: "Nobody's here, go away!"

"Ah yes", said the boy. "I remember this tree from way back when we first arrived here!"

He was suspicious, however.

It seemed to be serving as somebody's home. Someone who clearly wanted to be left alone.

But who?

As the boy was absorbed in his own thoughts, a voice rang out from above.

"Even monkeys fall from the trees, here! Jumping Kick!"

Suddenly, a creature came jumping down from the crown of the tree, delivering a devastating kick to Monzaemon who was knocked down in the process.

"Ouch", the boy yelled as the impact of the kick also knocked him down to his knees. "Are you crazy?"

The creature that had attacked them was now standing there in front of them.

It was the Ultimate-level Digimon known as Etemon.

Their eyes were covered with shades and their monkey-like appearance made them appear as a serious fighter that's not to be underestimated.

They seemed to be bothered by the duo's presence in front of what seemed to be their tree house.

Etemon didn't hesitate and instantly bombarded Monzaemon with a couple of strikes including some powerful Buster Dives.

Monzaemon had to invest quite some energy in order to dodge and block some of Etemon's attacks, however, the majority of strikes still came through and so the boy decided to help his partner out by providing some battling disks.

These helped Monzaemon move a little faster and therefore outspeed his opponent who was preparing to unleash their ultimate attack.

Fortunately for Monzaemon, he managed to interrupt Etemon's attempted finisher and countered with his own special technique.

The Lovely Attack connected flush with Etemon's body and the aggressive monkey-Digimon dramatically fell to the floor.

"Awesome, what a great fight, buddy!", the boy celebrated. He was proud of his partner who managed to defeat one Ultimate-level Digimon after another.



As Etemon came to, they looked around confused claiming they are the strongest of all Digimon. "In your city, I will show you all how strong I am!", they bragged and ran towards File City. "I hope he won't cause any trouble", the boy worried.

And with that, yet another citizen was recruited for the city.

The duo then continued to wait for the Lake Guardian to appear, constantly checking the designated spot at Dragon-Eye Lake.

However, no signs of the legendary creature yet.

That's when they decided to pay the Drimogemon in Drill Tunnel a brief visit.

They hadn't stopped by in ages and the boy wanted to make sure that the diligent Digimon were in good spirits and making some progress.

Just a short walk later, the duo arrived at the Drill Tunnel's entrance however something felt off this time.

The boy couldn't really make out what it was until he spotted the sign hanging atop the entrance.

It usually said: "Drill Tunnel" in Japanese Katakana symbols, however somebody must have secretly changed it.

It now read: "Ogre Tunnel" and the boy instantly knew what must have happened here.

Before he could wrap his head around it, somebody was exiting the tunnel and walking towards the duo.

It was actually one of the market managers from the card shop in Gear Savanna.

"Weird, I didn't know you had to pay to get through", the manager said upon spotting the heroes.

The boy made two assumptions.

First, Drimogemon must have finished digging through the tunnel and connecting Native Forest to the foot of Mt. Panorama, so that's how the market manager was able to walk on through and secondly, Ogremon and his henchmen must have taken over the tunnel.

"Oh no, I hope the Drimogemon are not in danger", the boy worried as Monzaemon walked up ahead to scout for potential threats near the entrance.

"Be careful in there", the market manager warned the boy.

He nodded and followed his Digimon partner towards the entrance.

"It's time to settle this, once and for all", he was thinking.

The duo entered Drill Tunnel and didn't see anything out of the ordinary at first, however when they walked a bit further, they could hear voices in the back.

It sounded like they were counting money and other things - most likely their stolen goods - and one of the voices seemed awfully familiar.

"There's no doubt, it's our long-time rival, Ogremon", the boy concluded.

They slowly walked towards the voices and briefly stopped to discuss their strategy. They had to make sure to fight carefully to not accidentally damage the tunnels or any resident Digimon.

When they approached the ruffians, they were able to fully confirm it was the bandits - in their original formation.

Ogremon and his two Agumon stooges.

At first, Ogremon didn't recognize the two.

Instead, he was only thinking of his next profit and so he launched threats at the duo immediately.

"Hey you guys, if you want to pass, you have to give us all your stuff!"

"Forget it", the boy objected! "Instead, you guys better give up, now!"



"Hey, that's my line!", OGREMON responded as per usual.  
That's when he noticed who was standing in front of him.  
"Oh no, it's you two again? But that partner of yours looks different somehow.  
Well, who cares, give us your stuff anyway!"  
"You haven't changed one bit, have you? It was so easy to find you, have you stopped trying to hide from us?", the boy provoked OGREMON, who tensed up immediately.  
He was clearly irritated by these words and ordered his Agumon stooges to surround the duo instantly.

Monzaemon however, was ready and got into position as well.  
"I guess it's time to end this, isn't it?", OGREMON barked.  
The boy agreed and moved out of the way.

Monzaemon was eager to start the fight and instantly charged his powerful Thunder Justice strike.  
He hit one of the Agumon directly and it was knocked out with a single blow.

OGREMON looked at his fallen comrade and didn't know how to react for a minute.

Monzaemon didn't even hesitate and chased after the other Agumon who desperately tried to attack the teddy-Digimon with a Magma Bomb - but it showed no effect.  
The Ultimate-level Digimon was too strong at this point and knocked Agumon down with a single Buster Dive.  
With both Agumon defeated, that only left OGREMON to beat.  
The usually brash Digimon looked like his spirit was crushed just moments ago.  
He wasn't able to give Monzaemon a proper fight anymore - he was too upset at the squishy Digimon's strength.  
For Monzaemon, this was more or less a formality now as he bombarded OGREMON with back to back Thunder Justice attacks, taking down the leader of the bandits in the process.

And so, the battle was won. But was it the final battle?

OGREMON was lying down, staring at the ceiling of the tunnels. He looked defeated but not just physically.

"Why aren't you running again?", the boy asked.  
"I'm too exhausted", OGREMON responded and tried to sit up at least. "Did I ever tell you the reason I became a bandit?"  
"Actually no, since I don't recall ever having a proper conversation with you", the boy explained.  
"Oh yeah, you're right, I was always pretty mean to you, huh?", OGREMON admitted. "Since the island was in danger I thought that it was too late to save it anyway. That's why I became a bandit because I thought - why even bother fighting for the island? It was pointless to me."

"But that's the outright wrong approach!", the boy yelled. "Do you even know what we have been trying to do this entire time? We have been gathering Digimon in the city to strengthen our forces and to find the evil that's to blame for all the misery, and to defeat it!"

"Wait, are you saying there is a way?", OGREMON wondered, opening his eyes wide.  
"Yes, and there's something to do for every Digimon, don't you know? Nothing is impossible!", the boy encouraged OGREMON.  
"But after everything I have done, how could I possibly show myself in File City?", OGREMON worried.  
"Even if I apologize to everyone, how do I atone for my sins?"



"That probably won't happen in a day and most likely also not in a week", the boy explained. "But you have to start somewhere, right? And when you are genuinely sorry for what you did, I'm sure the Digimon of File City can find it in their hearts and eventually forgive you. So, are you coming?"

Ogremon got up, walked up to the boy reaching out his hand.

The boy looked surprised but ended up shaking his now former arch enemy's hand.

"Oh, I will be there", Ogremon confirmed. "I will not disappoint you! And thank you for giving me a second chance."

Ogremon ran off, leaving his henchmen behind.

He wouldn't need their help anymore. The days of robbing other Digimon were over.

But would Ogremon be able to redeem himself?

That's a question for another day.

For now, the important thing was that Drill Tunnel was saved and the duo gained a new unexpected ally.

After checking on the defeated Agumon, who looked helpless after their boss had left, the duo went deeper into the tunnel to check on the Drimogemon.

Not too far from their recent battlegrounds, they found a new opening in a cave that wasn't there before so they decided to enter.

What they found was some sort of shrine or memorial grounds.

A Drimogemon was standing by the entrance and confirmed that he had just recently discovered this place.

It seemed to be ancient.

The duo walked further inside and noticed an impressively large stone statue atop of what looked like an altar.

The statue looked like a sabertooth lion, a species thought to have roamed the planet ages ago.

Maybe there was a Digimon that looked just like this depiction?

Monzaemon suddenly rushed towards the altar - it seemed he spotted something.

And indeed, it was some sort of stone tablet that was loosely sticking out from an opening in the wall.

"Looks like some ancient writing was carved into this tablet", the boy mentioned. "Unfortunately, I can't read this at all, but I have a feeling I know who to bring this to!"

And so, the boy stowed away the stone tablet and further examined the shrine - he didn't find any other clues so he decided to move on.

The duo walked past the underground pond, then through the lava cave right to the spot where another Drimogemon was digging a new entrance for Drill Tunnel.

Just as expected, Drimogemon was all done and with that the tunnel was finally complete.

"Hey, Drimogemon!", the boy shouted.

"Oh, it's you two!", Drimogemon responded. "We have been waiting for this moment for so long but it's finally here. The tunnel went through!"

"That's amazing", the boy celebrated. "That way we won't have to travel through the mountains anymore to get to Gear Savanna."

Drimogemon looked happy but also kind of sad at the same time.

"I have been dreaming of this moment but now that it's here, what do I do with myself?"

"Why don't you join the city?", the boy suggested. "There's going to be lots of work for you to do!"

"That's a great idea, I still have lots of energy left!", Drimogemon confirmed. "I guess I will see you in File City then!"



And so, Drimogemon also moved to the city and Drill Tunnel was free of any danger and safe to pass through at any time, now.

But the heroic duo's adventures are still far from over - what would await them next on their journeys?

---

## **Chapter Eighteen**

After leaving Drill Tunnel through the western exit, the duo found themselves at the foot of Mt. Panorama, near Gear Savanna.

The boy had a clear destination in mind.

Ever since he found the stone tablet in that ancient shrine, he had a feeling that this was what Leomon, the savanna-patrol, was looking for.

He mentioned it was something his ancestors left behind and judging from the shrine's lion-statue, there was a high chance this was the item in question.

After walking through Gear Savanna for a little while, the duo reached the cliff-top at which they had met Leomon before.

Fortunately, the heroic Digimon was still waiting there and so the boy walked up to him to hand over the stone tablet.

"Long time no see", Leomon opened. "How have you been? I see that you and your partner have grown much stronger!"

"I actually came here to give you this", the boy said as he handed Leomon the stone tablet. "I couldn't read the engravings but maybe you can?"

"Oh, this is indeed something my ancestors left behind", Leomon noticed. "How did you manage to find it?"

"We discovered some sort of shrine in Drill Tunnel", the boy explained.

"The Leomon Ancestral Cave", Leomon whispered. "I can't believe you found it so easily, I have been searching for it for a very long time. But that doesn't matter now that I hold this in my hands."

Leomon proceeded with inspecting the stone tablet and then started reading the engravings out loud.

"When great danger meets the island, the Digimon must unite their strength and gather in the city", Leomon recited. "That's basically the gist of it."

"So, are you going to join the city then?", the boy asked.

"Most definitely, I will go there right now!", Leomon confirmed as he ran off towards File City.

And with that, the Digimon of Gear Savanna have successfully moved to the city and the duo travelled back to Native Forest.

Throughout this entire time, the boy kept a close eye on the clock.

It was just before late afternoon, so the Lake Guardian might finally appear in front of them.

Thanks to the Drill Tunnel shortcut, they made it back in time and approached the southern part of Dragon-Eye Lake where they simply waited and kept an eye open.

There was almost no wind and the sun was moving closer to the horizon.

The usual fish silhouettes were present and nothing seemed to be out of the ordinary.

In the meantime, the boy made sure to organize his backpack to have quick access to his lures.

He decided to use simple meat and hooked it up.





Suddenly, Monzaemon jumped. He tapped the boy's shoulder who was still busy with assembling the bait.

"What's up, buddy?", he asked.

Monzaemon pointed at the lake - a giant silhouette appeared in the water and was clearly visible. Despite its size, the water stayed surprisingly calm.

"Oh boy, now that's some large fish, right?", the boy joked before realizing that this was his target.

"Wait, that must be the guardian!"

That's what Monzaemon was trying to tell him by continuously pointing at the silhouette.

"Haha, sorry buddy, I was a little distracted", the boy explained. "But now my full focus is on catching this giant fi...I mean, the Lake Guardian, that's what we came here for after all!"

And so, the boy prepared his Amazing Rod and looked for a good spot to cast it.

It took him a few tries to get it right as he underestimated the distance the line was able to cover.

However, after some attempts, he managed to land the lure in a good spot.

Now all he had to do was wait while the large silhouette swam around the lake on a fixed route.

Minutes passed but nothing happened. Maybe the bait wasn't good enough?

The boy was in thoughts when all of a sudden, the large shadow swam near the lure - circling around it before finally latching on to it.

The sheer size of the Digimon made the bobber go all over the place but the boy tried to keep calm and once the silhouette was hooked, he started reeling it in.

"Oh my, I knew this was going to be hard but this?", the boy feared. "Buddy, can you lend me a hand?"

He asked Monzaemon to secure him with some counter weight so he wouldn't be dragged into the water by the giant creature.

Many more minutes passed and just when the boy thought the shadow was close enough to the shore to reel it in, that's when it started thrashing around even more, moving further away again.

It was a game of nerves and patience - in the meantime, the sun had already set and it was quiet all around.

Or was it just the boy's imagination due to him being laser-focused?

"I can't let go of this rod, no matter what!", he fired himself up.

Once again, the silhouette moved quite close to the shore and that's when the boy knew it was now or never!

He got into position and used his entire strength to reel in this formidable creature.

And he did it! Like shot out of a cannon, a giant sea-snake-like Digimon surfaced and stared at the heroic duo.

The boy flinched.

He was in shock for a second.

Then he tried talking to the sea beast.

"If you are the Lake Guardian then I totally understand why they call you that!"

The guardian kept staring.

Then, suddenly, his facial expression changed. He started smiling at the duo.

"So, you are the avid fisherman?", the big creature asked. "My name is Seadramon, I am an aquatic Digimon and I also happen to be the guardian of Dragon-Eye Lake!"



"So the rumors were true", the boy said.

"I don't know what the rumors are about but yes, I do exist", Seadramon went on. "I make sure that evil stays away from these sacred grounds. So, what can I do for you today?"

The boy looked a little confused.

He didn't know what to say. In fact, he wanted to confirm if the rumors about the Lake Guardian were true and on top of that, he wanted to test his own fishing skills.

But asking the guardian for help or talking to him? He hasn't given this any thought at all and so he responded: "I'm going to be honest, I wasn't prepared to ask you for anything. I just wanted to meet you!"

Seadramon laughed. "Haha, well, then why don't we become friends?"

"Friends?", the boy asked. "Does that mean you will move to the city?"

"I have indeed heard of the city", Seadramon confirmed. "However, with all of my duties in this area, I can't quite leave here, I hope you understand. But, being friends with me means that you will receive this!"

Seadramon handed the boy a mysterious item.

"It's a flute!", Seadramon explained. "A symbol of our friendship. Play the flute and I will appear and carry you to the other side of the lake!"

"The other side of the lake?", the boy asked. "I didn't even know there was something beyond these waters!"

"There's a strange forest called Beetle Land with unique Digimon that live in wooden houses", Seadramon said. "In fact, why don't I take you there right now, if you're up for it?"

"Most definitely!", the boy firmly responded.

"Then hop on my back, you two!", Seadramon requested.

And so, the heroic duo had made yet another powerful ally in their quest to save File Island.

By the time they arrived in the mysterious forest on the other side, it was already late at night - time for Monzaemon to rest.

The duo thanked Seadramon for the help and the Lake Guardian took his leave while the heroes waved him goodbye.

"Okay buddy, this was a long day indeed", the boy said to his partner Digimon. "I'm sorry I made you stay up so late but let's rest over there tonight."

He pointed at a heap of leaves near some bushes.

That's where they spent their night.

While Monzaemon was sleeping soundly, the boy stood watch all night as he wasn't familiar with the native Digimon in this area.

He wanted to avoid any possible sneak attacks and so he kept guard all night long while the sound of crickets was echoing through the woods and only died down once dawn had come.

As soon as the sun rose, the temperatures were rising rapidly.

"Let's try and use the trees' shadows to hide from the sun", the boy suggested.

They started walking.

Strange noises kept sounding at all times and mysterious Digimon were buzzing, hopping and flying around them. They all looked like bug-Digimon so this forest truly lived up to its name.

They had to stay vigilant to not run into any unnecessary battles.

Having walked for a while, the duo arrived at some sort of plaza surrounded by a bunch of wooden buildings.



A small, red, bug-Digimon was standing there, behind a counter, seemingly waiting for someone or something.

"Hey, you two", the Digimon, also known as Tentomon, yelled. "Are you here to sign up for the Beetle Cup?"

"The what?", the boy asked.

"Don't tell me you haven't heard of the Beetle Cup before?", Tentomon grunted. "You must be living under a rock. But you are in luck because I am here to explain it to you. The Beetle Cup takes place every year on days with two twos."

"Two twos?", the boy repeated. "So you mean on the 22nd!"

"I said on a day with two twos, so it happens on a day with two twos!", Tentomon emphasized, slightly annoyed. "Anyway, where was I? Oh yes! I don't even know why I am explaining all of this to you because even if today was a day with two twos, you'd still not be able to participate, sorry!"

The boy was starting to lose his patience. "And why is that?"

"Don't tell me you also don't know this?", Tentomon kept going. "The Beetle Cup is, as the name implies, for insect-Digimon only! And last time I checked, Monzaemon doesn't fall under that category, now does it?"

Tentomon kept swaying back and forth, awaiting a reaction from the boy.

However, the boy had enough of Tentomon's antics and had already turned around and left.

"W-wait, you guys!", Tentomon yelled. "I have yet to reveal the most exciting thing about the Beetle Cup!"

"Why don't you tell a wall, or something?", the boy muttered to himself as he walked towards the building to his left, Monzaemon running after him.

He entered the wooden house, hoping to find some sort of distraction inside to cool off.

Inside this structure he found a neatly equipped gym for Digimon and a bunch of powerful looking insect-Digimon using them.

One of these Digimon spotted the duo and walked up to them.

"Hey, I haven't seen you guys around here, are you new to the gym?", the Digimon proceeded to ask.

"We just got here", the boy explained. "But this gym is very impressive indeed!"

"You guys seem to be nice", the big, red Digimon also known as Kuwagamon responded. "In fact, you might be able to help me with something. Do you know Kabuterimon? A blue insect-Digimon like me. He is my rival actually. And here comes the issue. I need tips and tricks on how to defeat Kabuterimon in battle. Somehow, he always ends up winning our duels. I end up training like a mad bug only to lose to him again and again. I am at wit's end here - help a friendly bug out here, will you?"

"Wow, okay, that's a lot of information to digest", the boy reacted. "So let me get this straight. You want to defeat Kabuterimon in your next duel and you need some ideas from my partner and me?"

"Exactly what I'm saying", Kuwagamon confirmed. "So, what do you got for me?"

"I'm going to be honest with you", said the boy. "If you keep doing the same things, stay in the same place and do the same exercises, you won't make any progress. You will reach your skill ceiling or in fact, you might have already reached it. So, the sure-fire method I suggest is moving to File City. We have a gym there as well and a change of scenery might not be so bad for you after all!"



"File City?", Kuwagamon repeated. "Is that the Digimon town near Native Forest? It's been ages since I have last been around that area. Okay sure, I will follow your advice in hopes of one day beating Kabuterimon with my new-found knowledge and strength. Thank you, little one, I will see you there!"

And so, Kuwagamon walked off, leaving his home behind to find a new one in File City.

"That actually went better than expected", the boy giggled.

He then proceeded to examine the training machines in the gym.

"Wow, these look really intense, we definitely have to come back here for some exercises, don't you think, buddy?"

Monzaemon was more distracted by the other Kuwagamon lifting tremendous amounts of weight.

One of them started talking to the duo, saying: "did you guys know that Kunemon's bed is actually not in Beetle Land but in Native Forest? Kunemon's babies are sleeping there and when they wake up, they become Kunemon, well, at least there is a chance they can digivolve into Kunemon."

The Digimon then continued lifting weights and ignored the duo like nobody was around.

"Well, I guess that's that?", the boy said. "Let's get out of here!"

Next up, the building on the right side of the plaza.

The duo walked on over and entered.

"Another gym?", the boy wondered.

This building was home to Kuwagamon's aforementioned rival, the powerful insect-Digimon Kabuterimon.

"Howdy, I see we have new faces here!", a Kabuterimon near the entrance greeted the duo. "You come at just the right time, I am actually bored to death and I need someone to talk to. Say, you wouldn't possibly know of a method that helps me train better? I have mastered every machine in this gym and I can't think of any way to improve my training routine."

The boy suddenly smirked but tried to hide it.

He knew exactly what he had to say next.

"I am actually here because of that!", he boasted. "There's a sure-fire way of bringing your training to the next level! In File City, you will not only find a gym to train at, but also worthy rivals and an endless amount of work to do. If that doesn't sound like a big challenge, then I don't know what does!"

Kabuterimon began jumping around from excitement.

"Say less, oh stranger! You are my lucky charm today", he said as he charged off.

"These insect-Digimon sure are eccentric but hey, whatever gets the job done, right buddy?", the boy smiled.

He then talked to some of the other Kabuterimon in the gym, gathering some decent information.

"Let me tell you more about the Beetle Cup", one of them said.

The boy raised one of his eyebrows but kept listening to him. "The Beetle Cup takes place every year on the 22nd!"

"So, I was right, it was the 22nd!", the boy interrupted Kabuterimon. "That shameless Tentomon!"

Kabuterimon stopped for a second, looking at the boy, and then continued.

"You need to be an insect-Digimon in order to participate, or in your case, have an insect-Digimon partner with you. Eligible Digimon are, for example, Kunemon, Kabuterimon, Kuwagamon and the most powerful insect-Digimon of them all. Herculeskabuterimon! If you can beat this behemoth, you will be rewarded plentifully. The winner of the tournament even gets the opportunity of becoming Herculeskabuterimon. Surely a once-in-a-lifetime chance!"



"That doesn't sound bad at all", the boy reacted. "Maybe we will participate at some point. Thank you for sharing this information!"

Lastly, they talked to one more Kabuterimon, before calling it a day.

"We will train day and night to become stronger and learn the strongest techniques", Kabuterimon declared. "Do you have what it takes, too?"

The boy looked confused while Kabuterimon examined Monzaemon.

"Hmm, not bad, you have certainly trained well! I think you are ready to learn this powerful technique!"

The powerful insect-Digimon has acknowledged Monzaemon's strength and proceeded with teaching him the most powerful plant-technique known as Bug.

The very same technique that Piximon used against the heroic duo back in Tropical Jungle.

A certainly powerful attack, however not of Monzaemon's specialty and therefore not applicable as of now.

But the boy urged his partner to keep the knowledge of this attack in the back of his mind as he praised him for his hard work.

With that, the day has further progressed and the duo managed to gain powerful allies for File City once again.

It was now time to travel back to their base of operations and find their next target location.

---

## ***Chapter Nineteen***

Back in File City, the boy and Monzaemon took a stroll around town to explore the latest establishments.

Beyond the meat farm, they found a new entrance to a cave now - a business run by Drimogemon with the help of Gabumon, named the Treasure Hunter.

For a set price, the boy could commission Drimogemon to go on a treasure hunt for a few days, seeking out rare items.

Next up, they found Mamemon, Mojoyamon and Ninjamon in a lower level of the Item Shop, called the Secret Item Shop.

While Ninjamon was only there to provide tips and tricks about items, Mojoyamon and Mamemon were selling special items, however the boy didn't feel like buying anything yet.

He simply wanted to explore first.

Having left the shop, they encountered OGREMON who was patrolling the plaza.

"Oh, hey buddies!", OGREMON yelled. "I am patrolling the area looking out for shady guys, haha. The city is now safer than ever!"

The boy smiled back at OGREMON and was just hoping that the former bandit chief had finally learned his lesson.

Near the eastern exit of the city, the duo saw some Digimon stare through the gate at another Digimon that seemed to have been kicked out and so they went there to check it out.

They found Etemon, crouching near the Digimon Bridge, outside of File City.

"Huh, who are you?", Etemon said upon seeing the duo. "Oh, it's you guys! Would you believe it, I got kicked out of the city when I told Jijimon about my plans to open up a harem!"



The boy didn't know if he heard right and simply decided to ignore Etemon and moved on.

It seems anything is possible in the Digital World, for sure.

After taking a stroll around town, the boy took care of Monzaemon's basic needs and next they decided to take Whamon up on their offer to transport them to Factorial Town via the ocean. Whamon happily obliged and so the duo was on their way to an entirely unknown area. They had to find out why the town was sealed off with a massive gate - something must have happened there and somebody was trying to hide it.

After a calm trip, the heroes arrived at the western port of Factorial Town, saying goodbye to Whamon and then moved on.

The boy looked around and noticed an entirely different environment from any other place they had visited before.

No greenery, no fresh air - just steel, concrete, polluted air and unpleasant smells - a city that surely didn't seem inviting at all.

But there was no other way, they had to search this place for any clues.

Maybe the big evil behind the island's misery was hiding in a sealed off place like this?

It surely seemed likely.

After walking for a bit, the duo noticed some Digimon they hadn't met before roaming around.

Guardromon, a bronze-colored machine-Digimon equipped with jetpacks and dangerous cannons.

These Digimon seemed like they were programmed to patrol near the port, to spot and eliminate any uninvited guests.

Shortly after, they noticed the duo and initiated their battling program taking a fighting stance.

Monzaemon got in position as well and the Guardromon attacked the heroic Digimon with mechanical attacks that seemed to hit very hard.

However, Monzaemon's defensive abilities were on a very high level by now so the squishy fighter took care of the two Guardromon in a matter of moments.

The defeated machine-Digimon ran off and the path was open now.

"I sure hope they aren't going to alert anyone", the boy feared.

The next area they stepped foot into seemed to be a simple and plain street for cars, however the boy didn't see any cars around.

In fact, there were no Digimon around either, at least that's what he thought.

Only after scanning the area for a bit, did he notice a smaller Digimon flexing their muscles on the side of the road.

Since it was so tiny, he didn't spot them right away and all the mechanical sounds in the background made it hard to focus on a particular thing.

The boy walked up to the Digimon who had spotted the duo by then as well.

"Excuse me", he opened. "Do you know why this town was sealed off from the outside? Did anything happen here?"

The Digimon looked up at the boy and Monzaemon and responded.

"I have no idea what you are talking about and honestly, I don't even care. My name is Metalgreymon and...wait, no, I'm just kidding, haha. My name is Metalmamemon, undefeated in 999 battles and you are going to be 1000, so get ready and fight me!"

The boy looked back at Monzaemon who already got into position. "Seems like we can't avoid fighting this one", the boy sighed.



And so the battle began.

The boy noticed that this Digimon's fighting style was somewhat similar to Mamemon who they fought a while ago at Mt. Panorama.

However, Metalmamemon was equipped with a solid steel helmet and sharp iron claws, so Monzaemon had to be on the lookout for that.

Metalmamemon opened with a technique the duo hadn't seen before.

A collimated, homing laser beam attack that hit its target multiple times.

Monzaemon wasn't sure how to dodge this move, or if it's even possible to evade it at all, so he focused on blocking the powerful attack instead.

This worked at first, however Monzaemon's movement was very restricted when having to constantly dodge these multi-hit attacks.

Metalmamemon was attacking at a fast pace and predicted most of Monzaemon's moves.

The heroes had to mix up their tactics so the boy decided to lend his partner a hand by throwing a High-Speed Disk at him, making his movements more efficient.

This seemed to have worked as Monzaemon was able to land a few Megaton Punches.

But Metalmamemon wouldn't be defeated so easily.

Instead, the scrappy Digimon charged up the laser cannon that they were wearing on their left hand and managed to fire off their ultimate attack, the Energy Bomb.

Monzaemon took a big hit and was knocked back temporarily.

The boy had to provide some healing items in order to get his partner back to full health.

"Wow, the Digimon in this area sure hit hard", the boy mentioned.

The battle continued and it was a constant back and forth until Monzaemon got into position and prepared for his ultimate move, the Lovely Attack.

The homing, spinning heart-shaped attack seemed to be Metalmamemon's weakness as the small Digimon was knocked down hard upon taking a direct hit.

And with that, the battle was won. Monzaemon was the winner!

Metalmamemon dusted off their small body upon getting up and praised the duo for their synergy and prowess.

"Not bad, really not bad", Metalmamemon said. "I have decided, I will follow you and become even stronger!"

The boy squinted.

"What is it with these smaller Digimon always asking to be my disciple and follow me around?", he was thinking at the moment.

"Thanks for the praise", he answered instead. "But I have a better idea. How about you join File City and contribute to the city's growth with your abundance of energy? We would be lucky to have a strong Digimon like you as a resident!"

"That convinces me", Metalmamemon smiled. "I guess I will see you in the city, then!"

The tough Digimon took off and the duo celebrated their firstly recruited Digimon of Factorial Town.

"Let's keep going like this and File City will be flourishing unlike ever before!", the boy proclaimed.

Having walked a bit further, the duo noticed a more open area with multiple paths to take.

The southern path led to the presumably only entrance to the city that was still sealed shut.

The eastern path had a small room of operations on its way and led to an even more open area.





However, the duo decided to take the northern path which looked quite suspicious to the boy. The only thing there was a manhole that led underground, possibly into the sewers but the manhole was opened by somebody and so they proceeded to climb downwards using a ladder.

The air became thicker and the stench that suddenly emerged was next to unbearable. Even Monzaemon was affected heavily by the gas that was filling the sewers. This definitely wasn't normal sewage air.

"Something must have happened here", the boy was thinking while holding his breath as best as he could.

Monzaemon was staggering.

The heroic Digimon struggled hard with this possibly poisonous gas.

"We have to find out what's going on here, and fast!", the boy said with urgency as he walked on deeper into the sewers.

He climbed down a small set of stairs and found a green, slimy Digimon trailing around in circles. A very familiar looking Digimon indeed.

It was a Numemon, however, this one looked even worse than normal Numemon did. He looked downright sick.

He tried talking to the weakened Digimon.

"Hey, are you okay? What happened here?"

Numemon responded with a very quiet voice.

"I feel sick, please help!"

"Hmm, maybe the air in here is responsible for that", the boy guessed. "Let's get out of here and find the cause or else, everyone will be in danger. If these sewers lead into the ocean, then the entire island could be doomed. I still wonder, is this somebody's doing? But who would be so ruthless and evil? No time to think about that right now, I have to act fast!"

And so the boy grabbed Monzaemon and climbed back up, quickly covering the manhole so the poisonous air couldn't infest the streets.

"We have to try and find the Digimon that controls the sewage water, maybe they don't realize the danger!", the boy hurried.

The room of operations near the plaza came to mind and so the boy stormed towards it and entered immediately.

He found a machine-Digimon operating a massive computer-like console.

"Maybe this Digimon can help us", the boy was thinking. "Hey, you! We need your help, this town, no, the entire island is in danger!"

He waved and yelled at the Digimon but the robot-like creature barely turned around.

When they did they only asked: "who are you and how did you get inside this city? Leave at once if you have no business here!"

"We do have business here!", the boy responded. That's when the machine-Digimon also known as Andromon fully turned around and looked at the boy.

"Something is wrong with the sewers. Both air and water are completely polluted. Could it be that the wastewater coming from the factory isn't being cleaned properly? We should make sure and check it out in person!"

Andromon waved their head.

"Impossible, the computers in the factory work perfectly fine and process sewage with 100% accuracy."

"And what if the computer malfunctions? What then?", the boy emphasized.

"Impossible", Andromon revoked. "Even in the unlikely event of a system failure, the data sheriff would shut down the system and oversee everything manually."

"And who is this data sheriff that you mentioned?", the boy asked.

"An Ultimate-level Digimon named Giromon. Giromon operates without fail. Everything is fine", Andromon said.

"Oh no", the boy responded. "A Digimon? That's even worse, we have to check it ourselves. Something is definitely not right here!"

"I've had it with you", Andromon barked. "Leave at once!"

The boy kept trying to get this Digimon's attention again but to no avail.

So he turned around, left the room and searched elsewhere.

"I can't believe this guy acts like this is not concerning them", the boy complained. "Let's check out this eastern part of the town, shall we?"

He looked back at Monzaemon who was still a little dizzy from before, however he was slowly getting better again.

Near the room of operations was yet another open square that led towards a narrow path to a giant factory.

Unfortunately, the entrance to the factory was heavily guarded by two Guardromon who wouldn't move an inch.

The boy walked up to them to see if he could somehow convince them to move by explaining the imminent threat.

However, the Guardramon duo didn't seem to care.

All they were programmed to do was stand there and guard the entrance.

"Hey you two, you have to let me in", the boy kept trying. "Something is wrong with the sewage of the factory and we have to investigate, please, this is a life and death situation!"

"No can do", one of the Guardromon responded.

The boy was thinking of how he could persuade the two machine-Digimon.

Should he have Monzaemon beat them up?

Or wouldn't that only stir the pot even more and they would call in reinforcements to throw them out of Factorial Town?

He kept thinking.

"I'm sure these guys don't stand guard here 24/7. Maybe we can sneak in during shift change when they are distracted! Yes, that has to be it!"

The boy was convinced that this strategy was going to work, however he now had to find out when this shift change happened, if it even happened at all.

He walked up to the Guardromon again and asked in a very friendly voice.

"You guys must be super tired from standing around all day! Don't you have somebody to take over for you?"

The Guardramon both looked at the boy and responded honestly.

"Don't be silly, our system is perfectly timed for a 12-hour shift."

"Oh, good for you", said the boy. "So, when is this shift change you are talking about?"

The Guardromon seemed to have been programmed to physically guard the entrance, however they didn't hold back on any classified information regarding this place and so they simply revealed the time of the shift change to the boy.

"You don't know? Shift change is always at noon and at midnight. Now please leave"



"Noon and midnight", the boy mentally repeated. "Got it, we'll wait until noon then, that's actually sooner than I thought!"

The boy grabbed Monzaemon and walked a bit further away from the guards, hiding behind a building where they couldn't see the duo.

And there they waited until it was time for the shift change.

In the meantime, the boy took care of Monzaemon who was still affected by the toxic mist from the sewers.

A few hours later, it was time to confirm if the Guardromon bluffed or if they indeed told the truth.

The duo walked up to the square and what they found was...nothing!

"No guards!", the boy yelled, then holding his mouth, thinking he yelled too loudly. "I hope nobody heard that. Wow, I can't believe this actually worked. Come on buddy, let's investigate the factory!"

Monzaemon and the boy maintained a low profile while exploring the insides of the factory.

Even in there, a few digimon were patrolling but they assumed that the duo were authorized visitors due to how heavily the front door was guarded.

And so, they were able to roam around the facility freely.

The boy picked up a few useful items he found in chests and checked every room for clues.

After walking for a little while, they noticed an upwards sliding door, similar to a hangar's hatch.

They walked inside and in the back of the room, they found a Guardromon standing near a strange contraption.

The machine-Digimon didn't seem hostile at all and so the boy decided to talk to them.

"Hey, what is this machine?", the boy asked curiously.

"Welcome, strangers", Guardromon greeted them. "We're conducting research on Digimon conversion here. With this machine, we can convert your Digimon and, oh..."

Guardromon stopped as they spotted Monzaemon. "Sorry, we can't convert this type, it has to be a different one."

The boy nodded as if he understood - which, in reality, he didn't.

But he decided to move on as the Guardromon wasn't really of any help to the duo.

After searching the factory for a while, the boy went back to a spot they had previously passed.

There he noticed another one of these sliding hatches that he must have missed before.

Some very loud and unpleasant sounds were emanating from that room and so, the heroes decided to enter and investigate.

In there, a smaller Digimon, equipped with a pair of sharp horns and a chain saw, was rampaging, destroying all the machinery and computers in sight while letting out deafening screeches.

"Oh no, this must be that so-called data sheriff, Giromon, that Andromon mentioned before", the boy feared. "If he keeps this up, the entire island is in danger. It's an Ultimate-level Digimon but we have to put an end to this. Let's go, Monzaemon!"

The boy's partner Digimon was already in position and only waited for his signal.

At first, he tried to talk some sense into Giromon but the crazed Digimon seemed to be entirely out of control. "Hehe, bad computers", he yelled. "I'm going to destroy everything that is bad."

Monzaemon tried to punch some sense into the rampaging Digimon by landing a clean Megaton Punch on the back of his head but that only seemed to further push Giromon's buttons.

The crazed Digimon turned around and attacked Monzaemon directly.

All of a sudden, the entire room turned dark and some strange green light emerged from Giromon's position, flooding the blacked room with a massive amount of wire frames and floating, digital objects.

The boy was confused.

Never before had he seen such a technique.

He wasn't sure what was going to happen next or where the enemy might attack from so he ordered Monzaemon to stay on guard for now.

A few seconds later, a giant explosion rattled the entire room.

The strange black and green matter disappeared but Monzaemon seemed to have been hit by one of the explosions.

The squishy fighter was knocked to the ground but quickly got back up, despite taking massive damage.

"What was this technique?", the boy wondered. "I have never seen something like this before. We have to be careful. This guy is no joke!"

Monzaemon nodded and got back into it, hitting Giromon with a number of Buster Dives.

He finally seemed to find his groove as his timing was just right, interrupting multiple of Giromon's attempts to strike.

The crazed Digimon didn't seem to have any specific attacking pattern, instead he randomly fired off his strongest techniques with most of them taking quite long to pull off. That's what Monzaemon took advantage of and hit some perfectly timed Thunder Justice strikes to knock back Giromon.

The frenzied Digimon was drawing negative energy from somewhere however, as he kept getting up, no matter how hard Monzaemon hit him.

Finally, Giromon got into position to charge his ultimate move, the Deadly Bomb, an incredibly strong energy bomb that would be placed on the floor like a mine.

However, the Digimon was so out of control that he launched the Deadly Bomb into a random corner of the room that was easily avoidable for Monzaemon who took advantage of this blunder immediately.

Monzaemon charged his ultimate move and fired a powerful Lovely Attack towards Giromon who was distracted by his own misfire from before.

The Lovely Attack proved to be the finisher and sent Giromon flying through the mostly destroyed control room.

The battle was won but instead of celebrating, the boy was concerned with all the damage that's been done.

Was it irreversible or did they still have a chance at saving the town and File Island?

"Out of energy", Giromon muttered as he collapsed to the ground.

"We have to cut off the flow of sewage water immediately!", the boy emphasized. "Let's leave this guy here for now and hurry back to Andromon. Maybe they are going to listen after learning about this situation."

The boy grabbed Monzaemon and the duo rushed back towards the factory's exit.

It seemed the programmed Guardromon were out of control now that the data sheriff was knocked out. The guards were nowhere to be seen, instead a bunch of Platinumsukamon were roaming around the square.

The duo had to be careful not to accidentally trigger a battle. This was truly the wrong time to fight, now.

Fortunately, they managed to swiftly travel back to Andromon's position and proceeded to alert the machine-Digimon.

"Hey, Andromon!", the boy yelled. "I was right, the factory was in trouble. We managed to stop the rampaging Giromon for now but we have to turn off the sewage at once!"



Andromon turned around in disbelief but they noticed the urgency in the hero's voice and so they finally decided to cooperate.

"Shutting down sewage control", Andromon said while frantically typing on the keyboard. "Done. Sewers should be back to normal now. Please go check for me!"

"Will do", the boy confirmed and ran off towards the sewers.

Luckily, the air and water seemed to have returned to normal, at least Monzaemon was doing fine now.

The stinging stench in the air was mostly gone as well.

Only that one Digimon from earlier, Numemon, still seemed to be affected or at least that's what the boy thought.

Numemon was still moving around in circles, looking confused.

"Hey, are you okay now?", the boy asked.

Numemon suddenly began screaming and was jumping up and down uncontrollably.

The slimy Digimon then proceeded to attack Monzaemon with a barrage of filth-type attacks.

Monzaemon wasn't very fond of that and charged a powerful Thunder Justice at Numemon who went down after a single blow.

It would have probably taken even less than that but Monzaemon didn't seem pleased at all being attacked with turds.

The boy was almost shocked seeing his usually calm and friendly Digimon partner so enraged.

"I guess I now know how to push his buttons", he was thinking. "I better keep that in mind."

In the meantime, the collapsed Numemon slowly gathered himself and looked around confused.

"He looks dumber, maybe he regained his senses!", the boy muttered.

"Feel better now?", he then asked. "Do you even know who saved you?"

Numemon's eyes grew bigger. "You want to be saved?", the green Digimon followed up.

"What? No?", the boy struggled. "We saved your life, dummy!"

"Cool, I'm a savior now!", Numemon celebrated.

The boy couldn't help but facepalm himself.

"Look, why don't you join File City and help us save the island, oh mighty savior?", he suggested with a hint of irony in his voice. "Do you know where the city is?"

"I know a few things", Numemon responded and crawled out of the sewers towards File City.

"Now that was a strange encounter", the boy mentioned. "I wonder if he will find his way..."

Monzaemon, who was busy cleaning himself up, returned to the boy and urged him to check back with Andromon.

They had yet to report back to them.

And so, the duo explained the situation and Andromon looked downright shocked.

"I-I think somebody was trying to get us", they assumed. "And that someone almost reached their goal. Hadn't you two been there..."

"What do you mean?", the boy asked, sensing more than just simple fear from Andromon.

"Apart from the sewage situation, the computers in the factory are storing important information about the island's past. And I think the unknown attacker was trying to erase all of that by brainwashing Giromon and having him destroy it for them. I'm afraid that they've reached their goal."

"Does that mean, all the information about the island's past is gone?", the boy worried.

"Maybe not entirely", Andromon pondered. "If you give me some time, I might be able to restore some of the information. Will you come back tomorrow?"

"You bet", the boy confirmed.



"Great, I'm going to open the front gates of Factorial Town, you may enter or leave as you please", Andromon said.

"Awesome, thank you", the boy responded. "See you tomorrow, then!"

He decided to use an Autopilot to return to the city instantly so his partner Digimon could get some rest after the recent fights.

Unexpectedly, Monzaemon refused to accept the Autopilot and the boy looked confused.

Was he still bothered by the filthy attacks from Numemon or was it something else?

The boy deemed it more important to return to the city instantly so he scolded his partner for disobeying and Monzaemon then accepted the Autopilot.

After all, moments like these were also part of raising a Digimon properly.

Back in the city, the duo rested at Jijimon's house for a little while.

That's when they noticed that the house had received a visual upgrade.

The boy was so occupied earlier that he completely missed the change.

The house now looked bigger and more solid than ever, being covered by a bunch of clean cardboard layers.

Inside, Angemon was now standing next to Jijimon.

The elder and the angelic Digimon greeted the duo and Angemon explained that he was acting as Jijimon's record keeper, providing the heroes with new information about potential city residents when needed.

The boy thanked Angemon for his services and took a rest in the newly built second room of the house.

After a few hours of resting, the duo stocked up on some items and had a big meal in the city's restaurant.

That's when they noticed that Vademon had joined the ranks as an intergalactic chef.

Monzaemon was eager to try some of Vademon's exotic cuisine and so the boy decided to order the chef's choice.

Monzaemon loved the extravagant meal composition and looked very pleased.

As the heroes kept spending their evening in the restaurant, the boy reminisced about how lively File City had become and how it used to look when he first arrived in this world.

How much time has passed in the real world?

Was his mother okay?

All of these questions came rushing to his head as soon as he had some time to think.

Monzaemon noticed his tamer's change in demeanor and tried to cheer him up by pulling off some funny feats.

The boy appreciated his partner's efforts and smiled throughout the entire show.

The restaurant's visitors and staff joined the duo and together they spent a peaceful and unforgettable evening.

It got late so the duo decided to spend the night back at Jijimon's to be ready for the next day.

Andromon was doing their best to restore as much data as possible so they had to believe in them wholeheartedly.

The boy had a hard time calming down that night as too many thoughts were circling in his brain.

He was terrified of the lengths the opposition would go to to achieve their goals, whatever they may have been.

After a while, he decided to worry about these things the next day together with everyone else and so he managed to calm himself down and get some rest.

He noticed that he was barely getting tired or hungry in this world, so his resting periods were always



a lot shorter than his Digimon partner's.  
The reason for this was unknown but he had his suspicions.  
But for now, it was time to rest.

The next morning came and the duo was ready to head straight back to Factorial Town.  
Despite the opened gates, it was still faster to take Whamon's ferry and so they landed at the town's port again.

They rushed directly to Andromon's location where the robot-Digimon was already waiting for them!

"Data repair is complete", Andromon confirmed. "Now, let's read the data. One hundred years ago, analog humans appeared on Digimon island. Analog humans and native Digimon fought very hard. After ten years of battle, the analog humans were defeated and disappeared. In the next ten years, mysteriously, the island's area almost doubled in size."

"So, humans fought Digimon?", the boy asked.

"I'm sorry, that's all the data we could recover", Andromon sighed.

"Don't worry", said the boy. "This is very important information. Now I know so much more. These humans are probably the ones who caused confusion and trouble on the island."

"But can humans live one hundred years?", Andromon wondered.

"I have had a theory for a while now and this all but confirms it", the boy responded. "It seems that for humans, time goes by slower in this world. I guess that's why I barely have to eat or sleep here. But one hundred years is a very long time. Those guys must be quite tough. And then there's the mysterious area growth of the island. What if the humans are responsible for this to carry out their plan, whatever it may be?"

"Do you think they are hiding somewhere?", Andromon asked.

"Probably, but I'll find them and do something", the boy promised. "Now I finally know why I'm here. Since I'm human, I need to deal with them."

"I must help, too", Andromon said. "I will go back and forth between here and the city whenever I can."

The boy thanked Andromon for their support.

This was crucial information that brought him a giant step closer to solving the island's mysteries.

The duo said their goodbyes to Andromon and made their way into the factory where they found Giromon all recovered.

Machine-Digimon have a special skill of repairing themselves over time and Giromon looked like he didn't waste any time whatsoever.

"It seems he is all well again", the boy said. "Have you regained your senses?"

"I was waiting for you", Giromon said, grinning from ear to ear. "I'm feeling a little bit funky, hehe".

"Hey, this is serious, you know?", the boy scolded him.

"The factory's closed now, so I have lots of free time. I'll help you", Giromon confirmed. "Well if you would excuse me!"

Giromon took off, leaving the concerned boy and Monzaemon behind.

"He regained his senses, but he still looks insane", the boy worried. "I hope this was a good idea. What is he even going to do in the city?"

And so, Factorial Town has been liberated and was safe again, at least for now.

But that was enough for the duo to leave that place in good conscience.

They used yet another Autopilot to return to File City so they could catch up on new rumors of potential city recruits.





Angemon has called for the boy and Monzaemon as he gathered some information about an ill-disposed, rude Digimon making the rounds.

Rumor had it, the Digimon would appear in areas where the heroic duo discovered rare treasures or unique Digimon.

Was the Digimon a treasure hunter or dealer in rare objects?

Or were they nosing around wherever they could?

Either way, the boy was intrigued and eager to catch the suspect.

After all, this was a welcome change of pace after their recent gruesome battles.

"The Digimon in question was rumored to be seen in very specific places", Angemon informed the duo. "These places are the *Ancient Dino Region*, specifically the *Speedy Time Zone*, the *Ogre Fortress*, the *Leomon Ancestor's Cave*, *Toy Mansion in Toy Town* and finally the *Sewers in Factorial Town*."

Suddenly, a memory came back to the boy when he heard that the suspicious Digimon had been seen in the Ancient Dino Region.

He recalled telling one of the city's residents about that strange Digimon he encountered there, that had dropped the bag expansion.

Surely, this was the Digimon Angemon was referring to.

"Was the Digimon in question by any chance a small, round, bearded and balding guy with a pair of shades and red boots and gloves on?", the boy asked Angemon.

"That's an oddly detailed description", Angemon wondered. "But yes, the rumors I have gathered all point towards this individual. Some say that Digimon's name is Nanimon and that it's an invader from another dimension but I find that hard to grasp. However, his true identity seems to be unknown, so I'm asking you to find that culprit and invite him into the city, maybe that way, we'll learn more about him while we keep an eye on him."

"That's already plenty of helpful information, thank you!", the boy smiled. "What do you say, buddy, shall we go on a manhunt or rather, a Digimon hunt?"

Monzaemon nodded with excitement. A welcome change of pace for the hard working heroes.

And so, the duo went to each of the named locations, starting with the Ogre Fortress.

There, near Ogremmon's kotatsu, a Digimon fitting the description was loitering.

"Hey you!", the boy yelled.

Nanimon, who was taken by surprise, panicked for a moment.

"Who are you?", he asked the boy before taking off.

"Oh no, we weren't able to talk to him properly", the boy complained. "I want to know what this guy's deal is! But hey, let's try the next location!"

Next, they went back to the Leomon Ancestor's Cave and just as expected, near the shrine, Nanimon was hiding in a corner.

He once again issued the words: "who are you?", before trying to escape again.

This time, the boy was trying to get a hold of the fugitive Digimon but he stumbled over a rock on the floor and fell.

Nanimon escaped while Monzaemon was just watching on.

"I could have used your help there, buddy!", the boy complained while laying flat on his face.

Monzaemon bowed down apologetically and the two proceeded to go to the next location on the list which was Toy Town's Toy Mansion.

There, in Warumonzaemon's room, Nanimon was hiding in a corner.

He spotted the duo who wouldn't stop pursuing him and he tried to escape once again.

This time, Monzaemon tried to catch the suspect, too but Nanimon smartly used the uneven floor to



his advantage, escaping by jumping over the toy boxes that were still standing around. "Damn, he got away again!", the boy cursed. "This is starting to get old. We have to catch this guy! So, what's next on our list? The sewers?"

The duo travelled back to Factorial Town, entered the manhole and searched the sewers for the defiant Digimon.

There, in a corner behind some pipes, Nanimon was hiding once again.

This time, the boy and Monzaemon tried to sneak up on him.

Fortunately, the loud water sounds from the sewers proved to be an advantage for the duo as they managed to get very close to Nanimon without him noticing them.

"Gotcha!", the boy shouted. "You're coming with us, now!" He reached out for Nanimon and managed to get a hold of the round Digimon.

"Eww, why are you oily?", the boy yelled. Nanimon's skin was covered by a slippery substance and managed to slip out from the boy's grip that way.

Monzaemon was trying to run after Nanimon but the escapee was too quick on his feet and managed to escape yet again.

"Okay, I've had it with this guy", the boy complained. "I'm done. We're going home, somebody else can search for him!"

And so, the duo went back to File City, not saying a single word.

When they entered Jijimon's house to report back to Angemon about their failed mission, Angemon was smiling at them.

"Amazing work, you two!", the angelic Digimon praised them. "Not only did you find Nanimon, but you also convinced him to join File City! Outstanding work, both of you!"

The boy looked back at Monzaemon and the two started laughing hysterically.

"He's somewhere in Agumon's Item Bank", Angemon added. "I don't quite know what he's doing there but at least we can keep an eye on him that way. Also, I don't know what's so funny but great job, both! Why don't you talk to Jijimon? He has something important to tell you"

---

## **Chapter Twenty**

Jijimon was standing near a window in the same room, waving his staff and calling the heroic duo over.

"Hey you two!", he yelled. "Come here, something exciting happened earlier! The moment we have been working towards for so long has finally come! The entrance to Mt. Infinity has appeared. Mt. Infinity is the final area that you have yet to explore!"

"That's amazing", the boy responded. "Where is it?"

"It's beyond the city's waterfall, just north of here", Jijimon explained.

"Wow, it's so close. Who would have thought that such a sealed off area would be right around here?", the boy wondered. "So that means, our main adversary is most likely hiding in there, am I right?"

Jijimon nodded and proceeded to warn him.

"You best be careful and prepare accordingly. Safety first!"

"I know but we have been working towards this moment for so long, I want to know who is responsible for all the pain and suffering that has happened on this island and I want to defeat them as soon as possible", the boy explained with fire in his eyes. "We might just head out today!"



Jijimon didn't object, instead leaving it to the boy's discretion. He left Jijimon's house to stock up on important battling items and planned to head for Mt. Infinity right away.

However, these plans were short-lived.

Right after exiting the house, the duo was sucker punched by a mysterious attacker, who approached them from the western part of the city at an insanely high speed.

The attacker struck Monzaemon at full force and the heroic Digimon was knocked down in the process.

"What was that?", the boy shouted while slowly lowering his arms that he had thrown up to protect his face from the strong winds created by the attacker.

A flying, snake-like Digimon with colorful hair and a boney mask appeared in front of them and it didn't look friendly.

"Human and Digimon", the mysterious Digimon muttered. "Must defeat at any cost!"

"Look at his eyes", the boy warned Monzaemon. "He seems to be influenced by someone or something!"

And so, the battle began. The supposedly brainwashed Digimon, known as Airdramon, versus File City's number one hero, Monzaemon.

Airdramon seemed to have undergone an unnatural power modification.

Despite being on the Champion-level, his attacks were fast and devastating. Monzaemon struggled to keep up at times but managed to gather himself once he figured out Airdramon's attacking pattern.

"He seems to be moving at lightspeed but I noticed his actions are most likely predetermined", the boy pointed out. "If you predict his movements and focus your strikes on his landing points, we might be able to land a devastating blow!"

Monzaemon stopped for a moment and observed his opponent's every move.

Then, after blocking a powerful Hurricane attack, he summoned an even more powerful Thunder Justice, landing a clean hit on Airdramon who was knocked down and stunned.

"He can't move!", the boy quickly yelled. "Now's our chance!"

Monzaemon didn't hesitate and proceeded to charge his best shot, the Lovely Attack.

The finisher connected and Airdramon went down. The battle was won.

The boy took a deep breath, then walked up to his partner and praised him for turning this battle around despite the devastating sneak attack.

"M-must defeat...them", Airdramon gasped before fully losing consciousness.

"Are you alright?", the boy yelled. "You need immediate medical attention!"

He asked Monzaemon for help and together they carried the unconscious Airdramon back into Jijimon's house, laying him on the bed in the back room.

The boy explained the situation to Jijimon and the elder understood immediately.

"A harbinger of doom...he was probably sent by the evil force to deal a pre-emptive strike. We must defeat them soon!"

"I know", the boy worryingly said. "That's why I wanted to handle this as soon as possible."

"You know, why don't you guys wait until tomorrow to climb Mt. Infinity?, Jijimon suggested. "The fight with Airdramon must have drained you and I would advise you to gather all your strength and move out tomorrow! I'm sure you are also hungry so why not have a good meal at the restaurant?"



The boy agreed, so he took Monzaemon and went to the restaurant to have dinner but when they entered, a bunch of the city's residents were already there, shouting: "SURPRISE!" and suddenly, the room was filled with confetti.

Jijimon had quietly organized a surprise party for the heroic duo, celebrating their efforts to revive File City and restoring its former glory.

"That's very kind of you all", the boy said. "But the big day is tomorrow and we haven't won the fight yet!"

"We all know that", Jijimon explained. "It is today that we are celebrating you both, because we all believe in you and we know that you two will win and purge this island from the lurking darkness. Take it as a sign of trust!"

The boy almost started crying after hearing Jijimon's words while looking at all the smiling faces of the residents.

"We will not disappoint you, I promise!", the boy proclaimed.

"That's the spirit", Jijimon said. "But for now, let's celebrate File City's prosperity together and worry about everything else tomorrow!"

And so, an unforgettable evening went down with every File City's resident joining in.

The restaurant prepared a banquet, the arena hosted a special showcase tournament, curling games were free all night long and the Item Shop prepared special item bundles at a discounted price.

"Remember this feeling", Jijimon announced in front of everyone. "We will be able to feel this joy every day, starting tomorrow, when our human savior and his Digimon partner defeat the enemy. I believe in them!"

Deep into the night, the boy decided it was time to rest and gather as much energy for the final fight that would take place the next day.

Before heading to bed, he took Monzaemon for a short walk near the Digimon Bridge to reminisce a little.

"Do you remember our first day here?", he said. "Well, maybe not since you were reborn at a later time but let me tell you, this bridge was all messed up and we were stranded in Tropical Jungle. I thought we had no way of returning to the city but before I knew it, the few small In-Training and Rookie-level Digimon of File City had rebuilt this bridge by themselves so we could traverse the river safely. If we all work together, we can move mountains and File City has proven this to be true time and time again. Even if tomorrow might be our final day together, buddy, I want you to know that I have enjoyed every single day with you in this world and I wouldn't trade this experience for anything. No matter what happens, we will always stay friends, promise?"

Monzaemon gave his tamer a big hug.

"Oh, I see, so you agree", the boy smiled. A few tears ran down his cheeks but he quickly wiped them before his partner Digimon could see them.

"It's pretty late now, how about we get some rest?"

Monzaemon agreed and the duo walked back to Jijimon's house, resting up in the back room, next to Airdramon who was still recovering from the damage he took during the earlier battle.

Fortunately, the injured Digimon was breathing much slower and calmly now.

And so, the duo took their well deserved rest and prepared everything for their great departure the morning after.



"Near the city's waterfall", the boy recalled Jijimon's words.  
He walked past the Meat Farm and noticed a platform forming a narrow path that led him and Monzaemon right to Mt. Infinity's entrance.

"So this is it, buddy", the boy stopped and said. "Are you ready?"  
Monzaemon looked as determined as ever.  
The heroes were prepared for anything and ready to save File Island and its residents once and for all.

They boldly entered the dungeon and found themselves in a most unexpected, almost scary place.  
"Wasn't this supposed to be a mountain?", the boy gasped. "What is all this?"

Indeed, this place looked nothing like a mountain area.  
Instead, everything was covered in green wireframe-like textures with only a few solid platforms to traverse.  
Looking into the distance, there was an endless sea of nothingness with ever repeating patterns.  
No telling what was up, down, left or right.

Running around these parts were a few mysterious Digimon that almost were perfectly camouflaged due to their skin having the exact same pattern as this area.  
"Wait, I remember these guys from Myotismon's lab!", the boy recalled.

The strange looking Digimon seemed to be honing their skills in this rough place, as if they were aiming to become something even more powerful at some point in time.

But the heroes couldn't concern themselves with those creatures.  
Instead, they had to move forward, or rather, find a safe way of traversing this intimidating area.  
The boy spotted some odd-looking platform up ahead.  
It was heavily guarded by three monstrous Vermillimon, a dinosaur-Digimon looking similar to Monochromon.  
"Maybe this platform will teleport us someplace else, just like in Ice Sanctuary", the boy suspected.  
"And the fact that it's being guarded only supports this theory. Let's see if we can sneak past these guys, buddy!"  
The three Vermillimon didn't look like they were going to move, instead they were simply watching the duo as they were trying to get past them.

The boy found a narrow path that would let them sneak past these large Digimon and so they avoided a three-on-one battle, at least for now.  
They stepped onto the teleporter platform and just as the boy suspected, it took them to a different area.  
It looked much like the previous one but had a different layout.  
However, each of these areas always had a starting point and an endpoint, marked by a red and green-colored teleporter.  
That way, the boy could figure out the path forwards without too much trouble.

The only issue was the huge amount of patrolling Digimon that kept moving in unpredictable patterns.  
"I suppose the bad guy has brainwashed all of these guys so they guard him, no matter what", the boy suspected.  
However, the heroic duo managed to sneak their way through and after collecting some useful items on the way, they arrived in a much more open area with no Digimon around - at least that's what the boy thought since he didn't spot anyone here.



But flying directly above them was a hostile, pitch-black Digimon with gleaming red eyes, two sharp horns and tattered demon wings.

A very familiar face.

"I know you", the boy shouted upon spotting the dark Digimon flying above him and Monzaemon. "You are Devimon, we know you from Myotismon's mansion! Don't you have any remorse for what you have done? Why are you doing all this?"

"I don't know and I honestly don't care, either", Devimon growled. "All I know is that you are my enemy."

The devilish Digimon slowly descended until his feet firmly touched the ground and thus the battle was about to start.

"Be careful, buddy", the boy warned Monzaemon. "I sense a purely negative aura coming from him. This is no ordinary Digimon!"

Monzaemon got into position and tried to anticipate Devimon's first move.

Devimon however, took his time and used back-to-back status buffing techniques to power himself up. This would make him even more dangerous the longer the fight went.

The boy reacted instantly and tossed some support disks at Monzaemon who would also be powered up in the process.

Devimon ran towards the heroic Digimon and summoned a devastating Megalo Spark, knocking Monzaemon down and stunning him for a few seconds.

But Monzaemon wouldn't give up.

Once he was able to move again, he lured Devimon in by pretending to still be immobilized.

That's when he landed a perfect hit with a solid Megaton Punch that left Devimon stunned this time around.

The dark angel's penetrating glare was truly intimidating but Monzaemon kept attacking while his opponent was unable to move.

An earth-shattering Thunder Justice connected at full force and dealt a lot of damage to Devimon. However, the devilish Digimon acted as if this massive blow didn't even scratch him, so he summoned yet another Megalo Spark.

This time, Monzaemon managed to block the attack which left Devimon wide open.

The squishy fighter took advantage and landed a clean hit with his Buster Dive.

Devimon looked visibly confused.

The recent technique must have shaken him up and he suddenly fired random moves in every direction, exhausting himself in the process.

"That's our chance!", the boy alerted Monzaemon. "Time for the Lovely Attack!"

Monzaemon acted quickly and landed a perfect hit with his ultimate move, resulting in Devimon's defeat.

The dark Digimon was knocked down and unable to get up for a few minutes.

Meanwhile, the boy took care of Monzaemon's minor injuries.

It wasn't an easy fight but they did it!

"Was this it? Did we save the island?", the boy wondered. "Something tells me that this was just a distraction sent by the big bad guy..."

A few moments later, Devimon regained his consciousness and looked at the duo.

He flapped his wings, ascended and was about to fly away.



"I can't believe they managed to brainwash me", Devimon barked before turning his attention to the boy. "We don't want a ruler, I hope you can beat them. But be careful, they are very strong."

And with that, Devimon was gone, leaving the duo behind and the way in front of them open.

"Did Devimon just tell us to be careful?", the boy wondered before praising his partner Digimon for this solid performance. "No time to lose, we have to move forward. Let's find this bad guy and teach them a lesson!"

Monzaemon firmly agreed, swaying back and forth with excitement.

The heroes were determined to save this island once and for all and so they used the next teleporter platform that took them to a different locale.

After using a few more of these teleporters, they landed in yet another large area.

Just like before, the boy suddenly felt a chill going down his spine.

"Something's off in this place", he warned his partner who was already scanning his surroundings.

Whenever they would find empty places like that, it usually meant bad news and just like before, a Digimon with a menacing presence was lurking in the distance.

This one looked especially intimidating, flapping its dark-blue wings and basically floating on the spot.

The head was covered with a solid iron mask and its reptile-like skin looked as tough as it gets.

The Digimon had cannon-like units attached to its hands but no feet at all - only a long tail moving back and forth.

The boy carefully walked up to the Digimon who looked like it was staring through him and Monzaemon, not focusing on anything in particular.

It didn't even block the next teleporter platform, but the boy noticed two item boxes right behind it and so he contemplated if he should try and fight this intimidating Digimon or if he should ignore it and move forward.

"Wow, this is creepy", the boy pointed out. "This Digimon acts like we're not here. What do you say, Monzaemon, should we strike and test our strength?"

Monzaemon squinted. He took a battling stance and therefore it was a very clear decision for the boy to make.

"I hope we won't regret this", he said. "But if we are going to defeat the evil forces of this world, we have to also take care of potential threats like this one!"

And so he sent Monzaemon after the big, scary Digimon whose name was Megadramon, an Ultimate-level dark-dragon-Digimon.

Monzaemon walked up to it and hit a Megaton Punch at full force.

Like a trigger, this seemed to have woken Megadramon from its trance.

Suddenly, the area went all dark and randomly shaped objects started flying around the duo.

The boy remembered this technique from their fight with Giromon back in Factorial Town.

The most powerful technique of File Island, DG Dimension, was about to be unleashed on Monzaemon.

The heroic Digimon got into a defensive stance and tried to block this powerful move that had seemingly infinite range.

However, the forces of the explosions were too strong and Monzaemon took a bad hit.

He got up after a few seconds and tried to find his rhythm again.

Meanwhile, Megadramon switched to yet another strong technique, the ice-move Giga Freeze.

It was trying to immobilize Monzaemon with the power of ice but Monzaemon managed to keep his distance whenever this ice-cold technique was launched at him.





A few successful Buster Dives and Thunder Justice hits later, Megadramon showed obvious signs of exhaustion as it moved much slower than before. Even its attempts at launching more DG Dimension attacks were thwarted by the vigilant Monzaemon who managed to get into position for his final strike.

Monzaemon fired off his strongest technique, the Lovely Attack. The heart-shaped energy attack was slowly floating towards Megadramon and for a moment it seemed that the intimidating dragon-Digimon was trying to avoid getting hit. However, its exhaustion came into play and it was unable to dodge this devastating attack resulting in a clean hit.

Megadramon stopped moving and collapsed instantly. The battle was won.

“Did we do it?”, the boy wondered. “It seems so. What an epic battle, buddy. You did amazing!” He proceeded to tiptoe past the unconscious Megadramon and opened the two treasure chests nearby. They contained useful status enhancement chips that the boy gave to his partner Digimon to prepare him for the final battle ahead. In the meantime, Megadramon has opened its eyes and briefly looked at the duo, then quickly vanished without uttering any words. The boy stood there, confused. “Did we win?”, he wondered. “No, we have to carry on, this couldn’t have been the final enemy!”

The duo kept walking and used yet another teleporter that took them to an area with just a straight path ahead. The Digimon that was waiting for them was certainly not unfamiliar to the boy.

“Metalgreymon!”, he yelled and ran up to the large Digimon that was guarding the door behind him. “Finally, you’re here!”, Metalgreymon barked. The boy hoped for this familiar Digimon to be friendly at least. But he quickly came to realize that they were in enemy territory and that potentially every Digimon they came across was also hostile towards them.

“Are you the final boss?”, the boy asked. “Sadly, I am not”, Metalgreymon responded instantly. “Okay, then I will deal with you later, move, we’re in a hurry!”, the boy demanded. “I am going nowhere”, Metalgreymon countered. “If you want to go any further, you have to deal with me first!” There was no way of talking sense into the android-Digimon. He seemed to have been brainwashed as well.

And so, the boy ordered Monzaemon to get ready to fight. They had to overcome Metalgreymon in order to make it to the final room that was lying just up ahead.

Metalgreymon didn’t hesitate to attack right away, summoning a large field of insanely hot lava. The infamous Meltdown technique that only the strongest Digimon were able to master. A devastating move that was practically impossible to dodge or prevent. Monzaemon took a hit and was stunned in the process.

“Oh no, we have to watch out for this technique”, the boy worried. “Let’s hope we can find a way around this.”



Monzaemon's immobilization gave Metalgreymon an opening to launch one of his most powerful techniques, the Infinity Burn - very befitting of the place they were fighting in. A burning wall of fire surrounded Monzaemon and the heroic Digimon took yet another devastating blow.

The boy reacted by tossing some healing disks at his partner who step by step got back into his groove.

The duo had to come up with a bold strategy if they wanted to defeat Metalgreymon.

This was their toughest test yet but the heroes weren't going to give up.

Instead, they both studied Metalgreymon's movements and attacking patterns and slowly but surely found an opening.

In the meantime, the boy made sure to keep Monzaemon's health up by providing refreshing healing items.

This cycle of observing, attacking, defending and healing took them to their limits but Monzaemon was able to steadily chip away at Metalgreymon.

At one point, the boy thought that they had their opponent cornered only for the big dino-Digimon to fire off his powerful Giga Destroyer finishing maneuver.

"Damn, he baited us", the boy cursed. "Quick, I have to heal my partner and get back into position." He panicked a little when he struggled to pull out the healing disks.

His hands were shaking from the massive impact of Metalgreymon's ultimate move - even though he was standing quite far away from the battlefield to not get physically hurt.

Monzaemon tried his best, to keep his wits about him and managed to land a perfect hit with his Thunder Justice.

Metalgreymon was stunned and that was the chance for a powerful followup attack.

Fortunately, Monzaemon has gathered enough energy by then to launch his ultimate technique, the Lovely Attack.

The narrow battlefield left Metalgreymon with no escape route and the hostile Digimon took a full blown hit.

He was knocked down for a moment and Monzaemon took advantage by switching to close combat. By the time Metalgreymon got back on his feet, the squishy teddy-fighter was already in front of him, bombarding him with repeated Megaton Punch attacks.

Monzaemon kept up this strategy as this was slowly driving Metalgreymon into a corner.

"We got him now!", the boy shouted. "Time to finish him!"

Monzaemon obliged and took a step back, charged his Thunder Justice for the win and landed a massive blow.

Metalgreymon was knocked down once again, tried to get back up, but ultimately collapsed from exhaustion.

The battle was indeed won, however it proved to be anything but easy.

Both heroes took deep breaths and had to sit down for a little while.

"This wasn't even the final fight", the boy mentioned. "Don't tell me the last battle is going to be even tougher than this? But hey, for now, I have to make sure Monzaemon is at 100%."

He proceeded to nurse Monzaemon back to full health and fed him some rations while Metalgreymon slowly came to.

"W-what happened?", Metalgreymon stuttered. "Oh no, don't tell me...did they actually manage to brainwash me, too?"

"So, you are back to your normal self?", the boy asked.



"Most certainly", the big Digimon responded. "I hope you can defeat them, but it won't be an easy fight, that's for sure. Until then, I'm gone!"

The defeated Digimon got up and slowly walked away, leaving only the boy and Monzaemon behind.

"So, this is it, huh?", he said. "I wasn't expecting our final fight to be in a strange place like this but then again, what exactly about our journey here has actually been normal or expected, right?" He laughed, briefly - then put on a straight face right after. "But we're not done here, I have to fulfill the promise I gave to every resident of File City and I absolutely am not allowed to fail here!"

He tensed up.

Monzaemon noticed the stress building up inside of his tamer and walked up to him, gave him a big, warm bear hug.

"Oh yes, buddy, you're absolutely right!", the boy reacted. "I don't have to do this alone. In fact, I have my very best friend right here beside me and we have overcome any and every obstacle in our path so far. Why wouldn't we master this one, too, right?"

Monzaemon smiled.

That's exactly what the heroic Digimon wanted to hear from his partner.

Right...heroes.

They were heroes.

That's not just some fancy title. It's a hard earned accomplishment.

And these heroes were about to face their biggest adversary.

What or who were they up against?

Who would go to such lengths to torture and antagonize these lovely, innocent Digimon...and for what?

All of these questions were circling around in the boy's head.

He wanted answers - no, he needed them.

But more importantly, he had to purge the evil that held this island hostage for such a long time.

"Are you ready to fight with me one more time, my friend?", he asked his partner.

Monzaemon was brimming with confidence.

It was time to fulfill their biggest task.

And so, the duo slowly walked ahead into the unknown, entering the last room...

A large, empty square - it looked slightly different from all the other areas but the boy could tell, they were still on Mt. Infinity.

Was this some sort of deeper core level they arrived at?

If this world was a computer, then this was certainly the case.

The deepest point in the network's sea.

Upon entering, the boy suddenly stopped.

Someone was here.

A human?

Or was it a Digimon?

He ran up to him.

Standing in front of the duo was the root of all evil, the mastermind behind all the pain and suffering.

But...

It was just an old man...



A skinny man...gray hair, wearing a gray suit with a tie and dark shoes. Most of his wrinkly face was covered by a pair of enormous glasses and under his arm, he carried a laptop. That was it, no intimidating monster, no scary strong Digimon beside him. Only this broken down old man.

"You're the boss!", the boy yelled at the man.

He fully turned around, facing the duo...then, he smiled...maliciously but at second glance, one could notice the rage building up inside of him.

His forward-leaning, fragile pose revealed his nasty, infuriated look underneath the glasses. He was certainly not too pleased seeing another human in this sphere.

"Nice to meet you", he said somewhat politely. He was truly trying to keep his voice down to not reveal his frustration. "I'm Analogman!"

"Analogman?", the boy was thinking to himself. "What kind of name is that? This must be an attempt at covering his true identity."

"I know all about you", Analogman bragged while maintaining his overconfident smile. "But I didn't know you were a kid!"

Suddenly, his demeanor changed.

He started to speak faster and his voice got louder, growing more and more frustrated. "I was so close to ruling the Net World, but to think that a mere child thwarted my plans?"

"You're a grown up!", the boy reasoned. "Stop this, you're hurting everyone!"

Analogman's facial expression changed once again. Pure apathy was written all over his face.

"I don't care if I'm hurting Digimon", he barked. "Digimon should obey humans like slaves. They are nothing more than mere tools. Tools to be used only by me, the soon-to-be ruler of the Digital World. What, do you think I'm the bad guy here? These monsters are too dangerous to be left unsupervised. I'm doing everyone a favor here while also fulfilling my biggest ambition. It's a win-win situation, don't you get it, little boy? For far too long have I been mocked by everyone but I will no longer let them make a fool out of me. I'm going to prove to the entire world that I'm fit to be the ruler of everything and that starts with this god-forsaken virtual island! They are going to wish they had never crossed me! Yes, I want everyone to fall to their knees and beg for their lives while I hold all the power, hahaha!"

The boy almost couldn't believe what he just heard.

"You really are a megalomaniac. I don't know who you are or what happened to you in the past, but this is just wrong. You are wrong! Digimon have hearts and minds and we are friends!"

Analogman laughed even louder.

"If you're such good friends, then let's fight and see if slaves or friends are better!"

The old man took a few steps back and frantically started typing on his laptop.

"Your turn, Machinedramon!", he screamed at the top of his lungs.

The typing got faster and faster and something seemed to manifest itself right in front of the heroes.



A huge energy field emerged from seemingly out of nowhere and a dazzling light blinded the boy temporarily.

This was followed by enormous wind that pulsated around the duo like a continuous shockwave.

And then, an enormous creature slowly took shape in the middle of the energy field.

A creature so massive and huge that the boy and his partner had to take several steps back to get a good look.

Slowly coming to life was a shape unlike anything they had ever seen before.

Glowing red-dotted eyes - hidden behind a solid steel-mask with sharp teeth and horns - were staring at them.

The creature had the shape of a dragon-like Digimon but was made entirely from metal.

Its left hand looked like Metalgreymon's claws, the right one like Megadramon's hands.

The covers on its kneecaps resembled Andromon's helmet and the large cannons on its back were similar to the cannon on Metalmamemon's hand.

Was this some sort of chimera or patchwork experiment created by this maniacal human?

Either way, the duo was facing the ultimate challenge and it was staring at them like a killer machine.

"Behold my most powerful slave, Machinedramon!", Analogman shouted, followed up by diabolical laughter.

"Okay buddy, we have to do this or else everything will be lost!", the boy urged Monzaemon on.

His partner already got into position for one final time and tried to land the first blow.

Machinedramon seemed to have a similar idea and so both contestants hit each other with powerful Megaton Punches at the very same time.

While Monzaemon was knocked down, Machinedramon barely flinched after being struck.

Monzaemon shook his head and immediately got back up.

The boy noticed his partner's iron will...it was written all over his face.

He wouldn't yield an inch, instead charging right back at his enemy.

This time, he tried using the Buster Dive to deal some more damage.

At the same time, Machinedramon charged an attack that the duo was very familiar with.

Using its right hand, the large Digimon summoned an electrical spark, fired it up in the air and let it crash down onto Monzaemon's position.

Thunder Justice but with a little more spice to it.

Fortunately for Monzaemon, he was about to charge at his opponent with a Buster Dive and the timing couldn't have been any more perfect.

Just when the Thunder Justice attack was about to strike Monzaemon, the pulling force of his own technique catapulted him towards Machinedramon, landing a clean hit, and dodging the Thunder Justice strike at the same time.

A stroke of genius!

Machinedramon looked like it took more damage this time and staggered backwards for just a brief moment.

However, it quickly gathered its composure and approached Monzaemon for yet another Megaton Punch.

The squishy Digimon managed to block it this time, however, and countered with one of his own.

This back and forth continued for a while until the boy was forced to provide his partner with a few healing items.

He took the opportunity to also toss some supporting items at Monzaemon, such as the Protection



disk that would keep his buddy from suffering any additional effects that techniques like Thunder Justice would usually cause.

One of the more interesting attacks from Machinedramon was the All Range Beam that the boy knew very well.

His recent partner, Metalgreymon, used it to great effect but this time, they were the ones that had to deal with its destructive power.

However, every time, the giant Digimon would launch the devastating beam drones upwards, it crouched down, protecting its oversized body from potential impact of its very own technique.

The boy quickly realized that this was one of its few weaknesses.

While Monzaemon had an easier time dodging the beams, Machinedramon put itself at a disadvantage every time it fired off this attack.

The boy ordered his partner to punish his opponent with a Thunder Justice of his own whenever it was crouching down in the defensive position.

And this seemed to work in the long run.

While the massive body of Machinedramon was able to withstand a multitude of direct hits, the boy noticed that even this seemingly perfect Digimon wasn't invincible.

It just took the heroes a lot of patience, caution and some quick thinking.

However, just when the boy thought he gained control of the battle, that's when the enemy would surprise him and Monzaemon with something new.

Right when Monzaemon thought he landed a direct hit with a Thunder Justice strike, Machinedramon managed to block at just the right time, providing the demonic Digimon with an opening to charge its ultimate move, the Infinity Cannon.

The most powerful move the heroes have ever seen.

Just before Machinedramon was ready to release the unstoppable surge of energy from its dual cannons, the boy managed to react quickly and provide Monzaemon with a healing disk, restoring his entire health.

The radiation from the Infinity Cannon was so massive that it was next to impossible to dodge it, even for a nimble Digimon such as Monzaemon.

The heroic Digimon took a grazing shot, somehow avoiding the full impact which would have most likely defeated Monzaemon.

And even so, the damage was massive, so the boy had to act fast and recover his partner as soon as possible.

"That was close!", he yelled. "Can you continue, buddy?"

Monzaemon slowly got back on his feet, his face being contorted with pain, but he gave it his all to continue.

The boy kept cheering him on, reminding him that he wasn't alone and that the entirety of File City was also backing him up in spirit.

This seemed to have worked as Monzaemon looked like the words of affirmation powered him up both physically and mentally.

The duo worked together to push Machinedramon back little by little until the huge Digimon was close to the edge of the platform.

"Now's your chance!", the boy shouted and Monzaemon managed to charge up his Lovely Attack, dealing a direct hit to Machinedramon who had nowhere to run.

This sort of attack proved to be quite effective and so the duo worked towards building up yet another one of them.

At that point, the battle had already lasted longer than any of their previous bouts but it was still not over.



Machinedramon had successfully blocked a series of Monzaemon's attacks and so it was attempting to charge its powerful Infinity Cannon once more.

Fortunately for the heroes, Monzaemon was about to release a Thunder Justice strike and it managed to hit Machinedramon just when it was shifting its cannons to release the deadly attack.

The large Digimon stumbled.

"Quick, Monzaemon, hit it with another one!", the boy shouted at the top of his lungs.

In the background, you could see Analogman's expression suddenly change.

Was it fear on his face?

Or simple disbelief?

His strongest soldier was taking hit after hit and there was nothing he could do about it.

Monzaemon truly fired on all cylinders, hitting his opponent with a surge of massive blows until the large Digimon stumbled even more, losing its balance and ultimately fell to its knees.

"It's now or never, let's end this once and for all!", the boy screamed.

Monzaemon moved extremely close to Machinedramon and charged up his ultimate technique right in front of the enemy's face.

It was probably the most powerful Lovely Attack he has ever summoned and it connected with a loud explosion, shattering Machinedramon's metal parts.

After the loud bang followed a brief moment of silence...

The gleaming, red eyes lapsed and the massive, damaged head of Machinedramon fell to the ground with a deep thud.

The boy and Monzaemon looked on while Analogman was just standing there, mouth wide open.

Suddenly, some sort of black fog emerged from Machinedramon's lifeless body and the demonic Digimon's body dissolved in a matter of seconds, leaving only its master behind.

The duo finally realized that this meant that they won.

"We did it, buddy!", the boy shouted while jumping up in the air with excitement.

Meanwhile, Analogman was scrambling for words.

"N-no way!", he stuttered. "My most powerful slave!"

"Look, you were wrong after all!", the boy pointed out. "If you leave the island alone and ask for forgiveness, they might forgive you."

The disbelief was written on Analogman's face.

He was slowly losing control of his emotions and began to tremble.

"I shouldn't have trusted Digimon. I'll do it myself! Yes, haha, this is going to work, I just have to do this and then I'm going to win!"

He turned around, opened his laptop and began typing frantically like before.

"What are you going to do?", the boy asked nervously.

"Normally, I wouldn't reveal my plans so easily but since you defeated my strongest slave, I will bring you into the loop. You see, I'm going to blow the entire island up and then I will escape to another world, haha! Too bad, kid, you were so close to defeating me! But this is a world for grown-ups and you will learn the hard way what it means to defy me!"





"What, oh no!", the boy panicked.

Suddenly, Analogman's physical body disappeared and a large depiction of his face appeared in front of the heroes - it almost looked like a flickering screen of sorts.

But what was the meaning of this?

"You're done for, now!", Analogman's voice echoed loudly throughout Mt. Infinity as his maniacally laughing face was visible on the screen.

The boy looked around to find some sort of switch or mechanism to magically stop this but he was out of options and so he stopped, looking down.

Tears came gushing out from his eyes.

"I'm sorry everyone, there's nothing I can do now", he cried.

That's when suddenly, out of nowhere, a crystal clear voice resonated.

"It's alright", the voice comfortingly said.

The boy looked visibly confused, turning his head and looking for the origin of that voice.

Meanwhile, something seemed to be wrong with Analogman's attempt at escaping the island.

His laughter died down almost instantly and a look of despair was all over his face.

"It's not transferring!", he panicked. "Something is wrong in the program. How is that possible? Did I, the master hacker, get hacked myself? What's happening?"

That's when the mysterious voice became even louder and a number of other familiar voices rang through in addition.

"I can hear everyone's voices! Who's there?", the boy yelled.

"I am sending our energy to you right now", the loudest voice confirmed.

It was Jijimon.

File City's residents somehow found a way to transmit a signal to the deepest layer of Mt. Infinity and therefore communicate with the heroes.

"Can you hear our voices?", Tokomon shouted on the other side.

"I guess we made it in time", Agumon added.

"You all...", the boy said, relieved to hear his friends' voices.

"No, this stupid thing! Help! Help me! Ahhhhh!", Analogman screamed out of pure desperation while the visual transmission of his face became blurrier by the second and then ultimately vanished with a final, earsplitting scream.

Then...a brief moment of utter silence.

The transmission was gone and so was Analogman's voice.

"He's gone, what happened?", the boy wondered.

"I don't know", Jijimon responded. "But you're not safe yet! With Giromon's and Andromon's help, we managed to hack into Analogman's system and prevented the bomb from destroying the entire island by making changes to the source code but the bad news is, your current location is not safe from that explosion. In the short amount of time, we only managed to scale down the explosion radius but we weren't able to completely stop it. In other words, you're still in the danger zone!"

"Jijimon?", the boy yelled. "Are you saying it's going to blow up? Please, do something!"



"Don't worry", Jijimon responded. "He should be here by now!"

And suddenly, out of a portal came Airdramon, the Digimon that ambushed the heroes earlier before entering Mt. Infinity.

He seemed to have regained his senses and recovered just enough to pick up the boy and Monzaemon.

The boy looked at the flying Digimon with pure happiness.

"Hurry up, come on, I will carry you guys out of here!", Airdramon urged them.

"Alright, let's get out of here!", the boy confirmed.

And so, the two heroes managed to escape the deadly explosion by a fraction of a second.

None of this would have been possible hadn't every File City resident worked together to save the heroes that in return saved their home.

"What's going to happen to Mt. Infinity after this massive explosion?", the boy asked Airdramon on the way back.

"I have spent a long time there, you know", Airdramon explained. "In fact, even after all these years, this place is still a mystery to me but what's for sure is that this explosion will most likely leave this sphere unaffected. It's like an endlessly expanding space filled with matter and antimatter. It won't die down and it won't stop growing. Even if something like an explosion might reshape some of its areas, the entirety of it is eternal."

"While I don't understand a thing you just said, I am glad that we managed to escape from there.

Thank you again, Airdramon", the boy followed up.

"I am the one that has to thank you, my friend", Airdramon smiled. "Okay, let's hurry up and get back together with the others, shall we?"

And so it came to be that Analogman disappeared.

Peace has returned to File Island.

And...

A short while later, the heroes made it back to File City safe and sound thanks to Airdramon and everyone else.

The citizens welcomed them back with open arms and big smiles on their faces.

"See?", Jijimon laughed. "I told you last night's farewell celebration wasn't going to put a kiss of death on the outcome."

"I guess you were right", the boy laughed. "But now we have much more time to celebrate for many more days to come!"

Having said this, the boy noticed some of the smiling faces turn sad all of a sudden.

Some Digimon were already shedding tears and he couldn't make out the reason why.

"Unfortunately, this won't be possible right now", Jijimon explained with sadness in his voice.

The boy looked confused and shocked at the same time.

"What? Why is that? Didn't we destroy the evil that threatened the island?"

"That's exactly why", Jijimon responded.

"The time has come."

Tears started rolling down the boy's cheeks.



"I wish I could stay", he cried uncontrollably. "But then again, my mom also worries about me and I can't stay here forever!"

"That's a wise response, my boy", Jijimon praised him. "Thank you, for everything that you have done for us. I wish I could repay you somehow."

"Don't forget us", Tokomon cried in the back.

"We'll see each other again, I am sure of it", Airdramon comforted the boy.

The tears kept flowing but the boy slowly got them under control.

"I had an amazing time with you all here, thank you so much", he smiled. "I still remember my very first day here and how rundown this place looked. I can hardly believe that it has turned into such a prosperous city, so full of life. But it is very real and all of us together, we made that happen. So, thank you for allowing me to be here with you all, I promise, I will never forget you and I will somehow find a way to visit you again."

"You should take the final moments to say goodbye to your partner", Jijimon urged the boy. "The farewell ceremony has to start soon. Now that the threat has subsided, this world will start to treat you like a foreign object and reject you. I don't want to endanger you in any way, so we will have to hurry up."

"I understand", the boy nodded, wiping the tears from his cheeks.

He turned around and looked at his partner Digimon, Monzaemon.

"My dearest friend, wasn't our adventure grand? I will never forget you, let's have another adventure at some point down the line."

Light particles started emanating from the boy's body as Jijimon started performing the ceremony.

"Funny, isn't it?" he smiled, while the tears started rolling again. "Usually, this happens to you, doesn't it?"

The boy held both his arms in the air and started waving heavily, smiling as bright as he could while his body turned more and more into light particles.

Lastly, his physical form has disappeared, leaving behind only a faint ball of light.

Jijimon performed the final action and the remains of the light were sent into the sky, disappearing into thin air.

For an instant, there was nothing.

No floor beneath him, no air in his lungs. Just falling - falling through color, through sound, through a storm of voices calling his name. Or was it even his name? He couldn't tell.

Just like back then...

Next, with a thud, he landed.

---

## ***Epilogue***

A most familiar wooden scent, a soft carpet on the floor and his favorite posters hanging from the wall. Yes, this was the boy's room.

He really made it back to the human world.



But how much time had passed?  
Would his mother even remember him?  
Was she even still living in this place or was this a stranger's room?

No, it couldn't have been.  
The room looked exactly the same from back when he was sucked into his V-Pet toy.

Suddenly, a door opened in the distance.  
The boy knew exactly which door just from listening.  
Almost instantly, he got up on his feet and stormed out of the room.

"I'm home", a warm and friendly voice said.  
The boy ran to the hallway and found his mother, entering their home.

"Mom", he cried from happiness as he hugged her tightly.

...

Weeks have gone by since the boy's return.  
His daily life had returned to normal and soon he would experience the same boredom he felt, before he was drawn to the Digital World.  
On top of that, with every single passing day, he would grow more worried - worried that the Digimon in File City would forget him.

"How many years must have passed over there now, while I'm back here?", he was thinking to himself every night with tears in his eyes.

The days would go by with a set routine.  
Wake up, eat breakfast that his mom made him before she left for work, go to school, endure school and afterwards, meet up with his friends to play with their V-Pets again.  
Only these days, the boy would be victorious in all of their battles.  
By this time, he had raised a Mamemon in his virtual game and he applied all of the knowledge and experience he gathered in his Digimon World adventure, to defeat his friends, no matter how strong of a Digimon they would raise.

It was one of those afternoons again.  
The setting sun had flooded the city in orange but the boy and his friends were still battling with their toys in the local park.

"See? My Mamemon wins!", the boy laughed, after having defeated his friend for the 12th time in a row.

"No way, how come you keep on winning?", one of his friends shouted in frustration.

"You really got good at raising Digimon, you know?", his opponent praised him.

The boy laughed. "Haha, I had to because when I was there I had such a hard time!"

Then, silence...  
He accidentally referred to it again.  
The group stared at him.  
Everyone had irritated looks on their faces.

"What?", one of them yelled.

The boy looked intimidated and nervously moved his eyes from left to right.  
"N-nothing?", he responded.



“Are you talking about Digimon World again?”, one of the kids complained. “Stop dreaming!”

“I’m telling the truth, but nobody believes me!”, the boy was thinking to himself, looking down on the ground.

Suddenly, the sky turned unusually dark.

No, it wasn’t night time just yet.

The park’s clock stopped working and small lightning emerged from it while the ground rattled and tiny rocks started levitating.

“What in the world is happening?”, one of the boys wondered. “Is it an earthquake?”

The boy knew that this was no ordinary occurrence.

It was a strange phenomenon that he had experienced once before.

Yes, back then, in his room, all by himself!

“Could it be?”, he wondered.

His V-Pet started shaking uncontrollably and then a pillar of light rapidly emerged from it!

“Woah!”, all the kids were yelling while getting knocked to the ground from the shock.

The sky had returned to normal and the shaking stopped when a small creature appeared in the midst of the group.

“Mamemon!”, the boy yelled. It was the Digimon he was using in battle against his friends.

The kids couldn’t believe their eyes and they just kept on staring.

An actual Digimon had just materialized before them in the real world and that wasn’t all.

The small creature seemed to be alarmed by something judging from their expression.

Mamemon started to explain.

But the words coming out from their mouth were just incomprehensible babbling.

The kids didn’t understand a thing the small Digimon was saying.

Everyone, except for the boy who had been living among Digimon for a while.

He was able to understand every single word and managed to grasp the situation.

“What?”, he yelled in distress. “Analogman is back again?”

Mamemon nodded. The Digital World needed its savior back to protect everyone from this new threat.

The boy understood and had a determined look on his face.

“Alright, I already know what I have to do”, he said as he placed his V-Pet on the ground.

“Will you deliver my Digimon?”, he asked.

Mamemon was already prepared for this question and so the V-Pet started vibrating and the light pillar emerged once again.

“Deliver where?”, one of his friends asked.

They still couldn’t believe that Digimon really existed.

The boy had told them the truth all along and that Mamemon right there was proof.

“Where?”, the boy smiled. “Where else? Digimon World!”

And with that, the light beam sucked him back into the V-Pet and he would once again travel into the Digital World.

The kids were left behind in the park, still sitting on the floor, in disbelief.

Of course, they didn’t know where exactly this Digimon World was or even what it was.



They also didn't know about the difference in time progression.  
It could be just a few moments later that the boy might show up before them again.  
But for now, they were the only witnesses to this paranormal phenomenon and they agreed to keep it secret until their friend returned home safely.

Meanwhile, the space-time transfer was complete and the boy had successfully travelled back to File City.

There he was...he couldn't believe he would be back so soon.  
But was it really that soon?  
For the Digimon here, a long time must have passed.  
His thoughts from earlier came back.  
What if they forgot all about him?

He shook his head. A warm breeze tickled his nose. The air smelled like spring.

No, they couldn't have forgotten about him.  
After all, they were the ones who called him back here due to the new looming threat.

He looked around.  
The city looked as prosperous as ever.  
Every building was intact and the Digimon were happily at work. In fact, they haven't even noticed him yet.  
That's when he turned around and spotted something.  
His eyes opened wide.  
It was Monzaemon, his partner Digimon!

He teared up. But they were tears of joy.

"I'm back, buddy", he smiled while the tears came running down his cheeks. "Thank you for inviting me. I hope we can work together again like old times!"

Monzaemon walked up to him and gave him a big hug.  
The heroic duo was once again reunited and their bond seemed to be as strong as ever.  
Almost as if the boy had never left.  
The duo then entered Jijimon's house to inquire about this new threat.

Something seemed odd to the boy, however.  
Weeks have passed in the real world, so, decades must have passed by in the Digital World.  
So, how come that his partner Digimon didn't pass away from old age like his very first partner, Metalgreymon, did?

Jijimon offered a warm welcome to the heroic duo and explained everything to the boy.  
"That's because I made a backup save of Monzaemon's data at the time you left us.  
Once I heard that you will come back to us, I simply loaded that safe file.  
So to him, it's as if you had never left.  
All your past adventures are still fresh in his mind and your bond is just as strong as back then."

"Wow, that's amazing, Jijimon!", the boy celebrated. "I didn't even know that such a thing was possible. But then again, I have said that many times about a lot of things in this world, didn't I, haha!  
So, what's all the fuss about? I heard from Mamemon that Analogman has returned? How is that even possible?"



"So, here is the thing", Jijimon started. "It feels like Analogman, but I can't pinpoint his exact position. Therefore, I do not have any other information than that. The only thing that I have heard is that in certain regions, some Digimon mysteriously passed out and lost part of their memory upon waking up again. Also, whenever this happened, the surrounding area and its Digimon were left completely devastated. This has me concerned and since I can feel his presence, I strongly assume that this must be Analogman's doing. That's why I called you here. Please seek him out and put an end to this!"

"Understood!", the boy confirmed. "I will find this guy and fight him off once and for all!"

"Thank you", Jijimon smiled. "I truly appreciate your dedication and willingness to help us again. I couldn't have asked this of anyone else! Before you leave, please take this medal as a token of our gratitude. It shall be a symbol of great courage. The courage that was needed to defeat this island's biggest threat, Machinedramon! Oh and, I received this from the card shop owner in Gear Savanna. They asked me to deliver it to you, should you ever come back!"

Jijimon handed the boy that medal and a brand new Digimon card - it was a Machinedramon card. How ironic!

The boy thanked Jijimon and with that, he and Monzaemon started their investigation. They began asking around the city for clues, starting with Angemon, the top record keeper of the city. Angemon has heard rumors of these rampages taking place in various areas of File Island. The key areas he has heard about were *Mt. Infinity*, the abandoned *Ogre Fortress*, *Grey Lord's Mansion* and *Ice Sanctuary*.

"Okay, so that's where we'll look for clues!", the boy confirmed. "But first, let's ask more Digimon in the city."

They started exploring the city and noticed a few new residents that have moved in. The Secret Item Shop had a new clerk at the counter. It was none other than Devimon!

"So, you decided to finally help us?", the boy asked.

"Don't get the wrong idea", Devimon grunted. "I'm simply here to make a profit and I figured I could make the most sales in a crowded place like this. But my items are very rare and special. Only a true professional can handle them, hehe. So, what do you say, are you buying?"

The boy had a look at Devimon's range of products and they all looked similar to the status enhancement chips that have served him quite well throughout his journeys. But these ones in particular looked rather dark and suspicious.

"They will enhance your Digimon's status tremendously, more than these generic chips", Devimon explained with a smirk. "But that comes at a price. One of my chips will take off a full 24 hours of your Digimon's life span, so make sure to use them wisely, hehe!"

"Thanks but no thanks", the boy instantly responded. "We're out of here, Monzaemon!"

"Sooner or later you will come back to me, I know it haha!", Devimon laughed as the duo walked upstairs and left the shop.

Next, they walked towards Greymon's arena as they spotted a new face right outside the building. It was the dark dragon Digimon Megadramon!

They still had this intimidating glance on their face and all they were saying to the heroes was: "I am the strongest of them all, I don't care what anybody says. Just show up at the arena and I will show you!"





The boy slowly walked away from Megadramon, knowing that he wouldn't receive any hints from this scrappy Digimon, so he tried asking around inside the arena.

There, the duo noticed a few changes.

To their left was a counter with Metalgreymon standing across from it.

The huge Digimon immediately recognized the heroes and greeted them!

"Hey you two, our savior Monzaemon has arrived!", the big Digimon smiled. "This calls for a nickname, don't you think? Hmm, let me see, how about...Monzaemon, the greatest hero of all time? Or how about Viva la Monzaemon? No, wait, I got it! Long live Monzaemon!"

The boy rolled his eyes, slightly disappointed. "I guess not even a powerful Digimon like Metalgreymon can be of any help to us", he sighed.

He turned around and spotted another new establishment in the corner of the entrance hall.

It looked a little shady to him but at second glance, he spotted his friend, Airdramon, who had saved them from the explosion at Mt. Infinity.

"Hi my friends!", Airdramon greeted them. "Check this out, I have opened my very own shop. I'm a fortune teller, you know? I will tell my customer's fortunes for a small fee but for you guys, this service is free of charge!"

The boy smiled, but the skepticism was written all over his face.

"Okay, then, what do you have for us?", he asked.

"Let me see...hmm", Airdramon commenced. "Oh, I see a dark cloud above your heads. Some unknown evil is lurking in the shadows, waiting for you! Green is your lucky color and now I will tell you about your bond with Monzaemon. It's...not so bad! Hehe, that's it. Please stop by again soon!"

More wrinkles were forming on the boy's face.

Before even saying another word, he politely thanked Airdramon and left the building with Monzaemon.

"I guess that wasn't of any help", he sighed after he had left the arena. "How about we check out the most obvious place first? I mean, Mt. Infinity. That's where we met Analogman so there's a chance that he somehow survived and came back!"

Monzaemon agreed and the duo made their way towards the city's waterfall where the entrance to Mt. Infinity was.

The boy took extra caution when entering since he hasn't been there in a long time.

Who knows what might have changed inside and what kind of Digimon would be roaming around there now.

However, upon entering Mt. Infinity, he was surprised at how little to nothing had changed.

The area layout and even the Digimon were still the same, just like back then.

He sighed.

"That's a relief! If the other floors are still the same, too, we will have an easier time traversing this realm. Let's go, buddy!"

And so, the duo made their way through once again, using teleporter platforms like before and battling some Digimon here and there to get their fighting groove back.

Fortunately, they didn't lose a single step when it came to battling, so they swiftly managed to reach the core of Mt. Infinity.

Just before entering the final room, the boy walked especially slowly to scout for potential traps or any unexpected danger.

He remembered that the explosion from back then wouldn't necessarily mean that this area had



disappeared.  
It could have even stayed intact altogether.

And so, the duo entered the final room and to their surprise, they found it just as before.  
The data inside Mt. Infinity seemed to have reassembled itself to its former state somehow.  
The boy looked around carefully.  
However, no Analogman in sight.  
Maybe he was hiding somewhere to hit a sneak attack on them.

The duo walked closer inside the room and that's when they spotted something unexpected in the center.

"A-an egg?", the boy wondered.  
Something that looked like an egg was just sitting there in the middle of the room.  
"Why is there an egg here? Could it be Machinedramon's egg maybe?"

He walked up to it, slowly, almost tiptoeing and tried to touch it.  
All of a sudden, the white egg started moving.  
It had two cracks on the bottom from which two green, reptile-like legs emerged.

The boy jumped back instantly.  
"What the?", he yelled.

The supposed egg got up on its two feet and turned around.  
Another, bigger crack was visible in the shell and from there, two glaring, yellow, round eyes were staring at the duo.  
The boy wasn't able to make out any other facial features inside the crack.  
It was pitch-black in there, almost like an endless black hole.

"What in the world is that?", he wondered. That's when he remembered the conversation with Whamon back when he retrieved the treasure from the Secret Beach Cave.  
The Digivolution item that also looked like an egg.  
Whamon told him that a Champion-level Digimon would be able to evolve into a Digitamamon with its help.

"So, you must be one of those Digitamamon then, I suppose?", the boy asked.

No reaction from the oval Digimon.  
Then, it started hopping towards Monzaemon.  
"What now?", the boy reacted.

A lightning bolt started forming from the center crack of the egg.  
It was a Digimon technique.  
A very familiar one in fact.  
The boy noticed it fairly fast and yelled at Monzaemon.  
"Watch out!"

Monzaemon reacted in time and managed to dodge the devastating Thunder Justice strike that Digitamamon had just launched at them without hesitation.

"So, you are hostile, I see", the boy said. "I guess, we will have to take you out then, maybe that will get you to talk!"

And so, their first major battle after the hero's return had started.



Monzaemon tried to dish out a few Megaton Punches but the iron hard defense of Digitamamon protected them from taking big damage.  
A change in strategy was needed.

The boy suggested they use Thunder Justice attacks of their own in order to increase the damage dealt.

But Digitamamon was surprisingly quick on its feet.

The unexpectedly nimble Digimon managed to dodge a few of Monzaemon's strikes while countering with Thunder Justice and Meltdown attacks of its own.

"We have to regroup, buddy!", the boy reacted. "Focus on dodging for now while I figure out how to deal proper hits to it!"

The boy watched Digitamamon's every move very closely and started to notice a pattern. Yes, the enemy was quick and powerful while maintaining an almost impenetrable defense. A seemingly perfect Digimon but at a closer look, even this Digimon had its weaknesses.

And so, the boy figured out that, despite Digitamamon's rapid ground movement, it was surprisingly slow to get up after being knocked down or after blocking an attack, most likely due to its stature and having no arms to support it.

"That's it!", the boy shouted. "Try to hit it with a Buster Dive as soon as it uses one of its techniques. Don't worry about taking a hit, buddy. You can take it or even block it. But once you knock it down, it will take quite some time for this Digimon to get back up and that's where you will strike with a Thunder Justice. Digitamamon won't be able to dodge right after getting back up. So try and knock it off of its feet as best as you can!"

Monzaemon looked back at his tamer and nodded.  
He understood the assignment and so the new game plan was put in motion.

It took Monzaemon a bit to get the timing right but after a few failed attempts, he managed to get consistent hits with his most powerful technique.

This slowly chipped away at Digitamamon's health and soon, the egg-Digimon would move more sluggishly.

"Alright, let's try and end it all with your Lovely Attack!", the boy commanded.

However, the slight distraction by the command allowed Digitamamon to get in position and fire off its own finishing move - the Nightmare Syndrome.

A creepy, dark shadow with arms would emerge from the eggshell and hover above the two fighting Digimon.

It would eventually strike but what the boy didn't know at the time was the fact that this ultimate move was a double-edged sword.

There was a chance that the deranged shadow would choose to strike its owner without remorse and fortunately for the heroic duo, this was the case.

In a stroke of luck, the Nightmare Syndrome decided to full-on strike Digitamamon, so the demonic egg took a nasty hit resulting in a knockout.

The battle was won, although unexpectedly.  
The boy looked on in disbelief. "So, we won?"

Monzaemon nodded.

"I guess we still got it, huh buddy?", the boy celebrated.



Digitamamon was knocked out but managed to regain consciousness shortly after. "Do you know anything about Analogman's whereabouts?", the boy asked immediately. Digitamamon only looked at him. This Digimon didn't seem to be able to speak at all.

Shortly after, it rushed off and the duo was left by themselves again.

"I guess we weren't able to get any clues here", the boy admitted. "But at least we made sure that nothing evil was going down in here. So let's head back to File City and explore the other rumored areas, shall we?"

And so, the duo made their way back to the city where they would once again talk to Jijimon. "Oh, it's you", the elder said. "Digitamamon came here at lightning speed and stormed off just as fast. I think I spotted it at the restaurant, maybe another capable chef for the city?"

He paused briefly. "But now that you are here, there is something I wanted to talk to you about." The boy opened his eyes widely. "Oh yes? What is it?" "You have no idea how grateful we are for your heroic deeds", Jijimon went on. "The city is flourishing and it's all thanks to you. In fact, we have just reached our maximum prosperity. In other words, the city is finally complete! And so, I would like to reward you with yet another medal of honor!"

Jijimon disappeared in the back of the house for a little bit and came back with a shining, gold medal.

"This is a token of your bravery and extraordinary efforts. Thank you for bringing File City back to its former glory - even above and beyond. Please accept this medal."

The boy smiled. "I would have done it either way, but thank you for this medal! Now, we have to get going. Analogman wasn't on Mt. Infinity so we have to check out the other areas!"

"Oh why of course, don't let me stop you", Jijimon responded as he waved the duo goodbye.

"No time to lose, buddy", the boy said. "Let's check out the other designated spots!" And so, the duo made their way to Ice Sanctuary first.

Unfortunately, they didn't find anything out of the ordinary so after looking around for a little while, they decided to try the next spot.

Grey Lord's Mansion.

Having arrived there, Myotismon greeted them happily.

"It's been a while, you two! How have you been?"

"I'm sorry, Myotismon", the boy responded. "We don't have much time for small talk right now. We are trying to trace down Analogman's negative energy. Have you noticed anything strange around here recently?"

"Not that I know of", Myotismon said. "Oh, but wait. One of my men came back from a mission in Great Canyon and reported to me that there was something or someone wreaking havoc near a place called the Ogre Fortress. I know this might be a longshot but maybe it'll be of use to you!"

"That's actually very useful!", the boy confirmed. "We were going to check there next anyway and this just reinforces my suspicions! We're off - thank you and see you soon!"

The duo rushed to Great Canyon which thankfully wasn't too far away and they arrived at the entrance of Ogremmon's abandoned fortress.

Suddenly, the boy got chills.

"Something fishy is going on here and I am not talking about Whamon", the boy suspected. "Let's proceed with caution!"



They walked on through the entrance and instead of the usual hallway of the fortress, they found themselves in an entirely different area which they must have been teleported to.

Back Dimension.

"It looks just like Mt. Infinity", the boy wondered. "Where are we? Maybe it's the back end of this world? Let's get walking, buddy, but carefully!"

The paths were much more narrow compared to Mt. Infinity but fortunately, they were pretty straight forward.

Traversing them, the boy found a bunch of treasure chests containing status chips and another item that he had never seen before.

"Looks like Vademon's laser gun", he pointed out.

Indeed it was yet another one of these mysterious Digivolution items.

The boy packed it up and continued the search in this strange dimension.

The fact that this area housed a bunch of Tekkamon only made it more likely that Analogman was hiding somewhere around here.

Wherever these Digimon showed up, hackers might not be far off.

They had to dodge some other Digimon such as Bluemeron, Tankmon, Rockmon and Icedevimon on their way but after taking a few teleporters, they found themselves in a very familiar area.

Yes, there was no doubt, this was Ogremon's former base of operations, the Ogre Fortress.

The duo had successfully left the Back Dimension.

But something was different - and the boy didn't have to look around for long.

In fact, it was quite obvious.

"Machinedramon!", he yelled as he spotted the giant, metal-coated machine Digimon towering before him - Analogman standing right next to the behemoth.

But something was off.

Analogman had no noticeable expression on his face, instead he just stared into the distance, not even paying any attention to his biggest adversaries, the boy and Monzaemon.

"Hey, you!", the boy shouted at Analogman. "Why did you come back? I thought we had chased you away from this world. Tell me what you plan on doing!"

No response.

Analogman just stood there as if it was just his empty husk, staring into nothingness.

Then, suddenly, the body disappeared into thin air within a fraction of a second.

"Am I dreaming?", the boy wondered as he searched the area for Analogman. "He's really gone, what kind of cheap trick was that?"

Next, a mechanical roar sounded from the giant Digimon.

Machinedramon was still here and it looked like it was about to attack.

"Watch out, buddy!", the boy warned his partner. "Let's defeat this guy once again, I know you can do it!"

The boy quickly realized that even if Analogman wasn't here physically, he must have summoned his strongest soldier, Machinedramon, somehow, to get his revenge on the Digital World.

He knew he had to defeat the demonic beast in order to bring back peace to the island again.



Monzaemon was about to hit the first strike when he noticed that Machinedramon moved a little differently compared to the last time they fought.

Instead of going straight for one of its devastating attacks, Machinedramon used a power-up move. The Full Potential skill, that the boy knew very well from his former partner, seemed to be a new move in Machinedramon's arsenal.

This made the fight significantly harder as the dangerous Digimon became even more of a threat each time it used the power-up technique.

"Be careful, Monzaemon!", the boy said. "Let's use the same strategy as last time but with even more caution. I will make sure to provide you with healing items whenever needed!"

Monzaemon nodded and got into position.

His attacks dealt less damage to Machinedramon but the strategy still worked.

Trying to dodge the Thunder Justice strike, then using his own version of the devastating attack until his ultimate move was fully charged.

The only concerning thing was the powered up finishing move from Machinedramon.

The boy had to make sure that Monzaemon was at full health before taking the attack, so it wouldn't knock his partner out immediately.

Fortunately, the duo was able to interrupt most of Machinedramon's attempts at firing off its most powerful move but there were two instances where it was able to deal direct hits.

Monzaemon barely survived and the boy had to be ready to heal his partner back up immediately.

This continued until the insanely powerful monster was reaching its limit.

Machinedramon attempted an All Range Beam and did its signature kneel-down pose.

That's when a final Buster Dive by Monzaemon knocked the mechanical dragon off of its feet to the floor.

"Did we win?", the boy carefully asked. He noticed that Machinedramon wasn't getting up anymore.

"Yes, we did it! Great job, Monzaemon!"

Then he stopped for a second. "Wait, but what do we do now? How do we get rid of this massive Digimon?"

That's when Machinedramon disappeared into thin air - in the same manner as Analogman did earlier - but something was different.

In Machinedramon's place suddenly stood a small Rookie-level Digimon.

The red penguin-like Digimon Muchomon.

"W-where am I?", the visibly confused Digimon asked. "Sorry, I must have passed out. I'll be off then!"

And the Digimon left the scene, not knowing what had just gone down in the fortress.

"I don't understand anything anymore", the boy said as he stood there.

Monzaemon looked just as confused.

"I guess Analogman is gone and so is Machinedramon, aren't they?", he concluded. "Well, that means our job here is done? Let's go back and report to Jijimon"

And so, the duo travelled back to File City where the elder Jijimon was already waiting for them.

"I heard you defeated Machinedramon", Jijimon opened.

"Yes, that's true but I don't understand it at all", the boy responded. "Analogman and Machinedramon were there but at the same time it seemed as if they weren't there entirely. I don't know how else to say it."

"I assume it was Analogman's curse that he had left behind after you banned him from this island", Jijimon guessed.



"I wonder if he becomes peaceful now that we defeated him again?", the boy wondered.

"I don't know but I sure hope so", Jijimon responded.

"If Analogman returns, we will defeat him again!", the boy reassured Jijimon.

The elder Digimon proudly nodded and pointed at an item that was placed next to him.

"You are very reliable, thank you so much. Here, take this as a reward for your great courage. It was found on File City's meat farm! It's a Chain Melon, a mysterious food item with a lot of benefits!"

"Oh, thank you so much", the boy said. "I will make sure to use it wisely!"

And so, the final challenge of the heroic duo had been mastered.

After spending a couple of peaceful days on the island, the boy was thinking about returning to the Human World but was quickly convinced otherwise.

"The time goes by so much slower here!", he pointed out. "That means, I can stay here for a very long time without much time passing in the Human World - as long as this world doesn't reject me again of course! I can explore the island more thoroughly, we can participate in the arena's tournaments, play curling, learn more techniques, become rich and most importantly - fish. A lot!"

And with that, the adventures of the boy who was summoned to Digimon World on a summer's day, came to an end and he continued to enjoy life on File Island with his new-found Digimon friends.

What new adventures would await him in the future?

Would he be able to travel back to Digimon World once he had grown up?

Would he even be welcomed here again?

He would find out eventually but for now, his focus was to live in the moment with his best friend, his Digimon partner, in Digimon World...

## **THE END**

---

## **BONUS CHAPTER**

### **Analogman (Prequel) - A short story**

Mr. A woke up at exactly 5:59 a.m. every morning.

The alarm clock on his bedside table never rang - he switched it off a year ago because the ticking of its mechanical gears was enough. The small brass hands slid toward six, and when they aligned, he sat up as if pulled by a wire.





His apartment was quiet except for the clock.

He owned twelve identical shirts, twelve identical pairs of trousers, and twelve pairs of socks arranged in a grid inside his closet - all gray-colored. He selected Monday's set - though the day of the week made no real difference - and dressed with the same careful sequence he had practiced for years.

Left sock.

Right sock.

Shirt.

Trousers.

Glasses.

The watch was analog, of course. Every object he valued was.

He brewed coffee in a small metal percolator, the kind that clicked softly as pressure built inside. The sound comforted him. He disliked digital beeps, artificial lights, most screens - things that did not reveal their inner workings. Analog things had gears, springs, and resistance. You could understand them.

He liked that.

Unlike people, who were unpredictable.

Some even making fun of him. Yet to him, they were weak-minded as they relied heavily on digital machines.

The only digital thing he owned was a laptop PC on his kitchen table.

He had purchased it recently. A rare derivation from his usually strict personal purchase policies. Of course, next to the digital notebook was an actual notebook - thick paper, ruled lines, black ink.

At the top of the page he wrote:

5:59 — wake

6:03 — coffee

6:10 — read

Below the schedule he wrote his name the way he always did.

Analogman - at least that's what he called himself.

Barely anyone knew his actual name. To him it didn't matter.

He did not remember when he started calling himself that. His real name had become...unnecessary. Too many records, too many databases. Names lived on servers now. A label in someone else's machine.

Analogman existed outside that.

His days rarely changed.

At 7:30 he left the apartment.

At 7:32 he locked the door.

At 7:34 he reached the bus stop.

He worked in a small electronics repair shop where people brought broken radios and cassette players.

Few customers came anymore.

Most people threw things away.



Analogman repaired them.

He liked the circuit boards - thin green maps with visible pathways. Signals moved through copper traces like cars on tiny roads. Logical. Predictable.

Unlike the internet.

The internet was something else entirely.

He did not like to use computers.

But at night, after returning home at 6:00 p.m. exactly, he sat at the one digital device he allowed himself: his laptop.

It hummed like a refrigerator.

At first he only observed.

He read about networks. Protocols. Servers. Routing tables. The invisible infrastructure beneath the glowing screens of the world.

He discovered something fascinating.

The internet was not magic.

It was just... connections.

Machines talking to machines.

Signals traveling through cables across oceans.

Was it that different from his beloved analog world?

His schedule gained a new entry.

8:00 p.m. - network study

He began learning quietly.

Terminal windows replaced web browsers.

He copied commands from obscure forums.

Words appeared that felt powerful: packet, exploit, root access, port scanning.

The first time he accessed a server that was not his own, he leaned back slowly in his chair.

The screen had not resisted him.

The machine had simply... allowed it.

Like a door left unlocked.

Analogman wrote in his notebook.

"Systems want to be understood. Once understood, they can be controlled."

He underlined the last word three times.

Weeks became months.

His closet remained perfectly ordered.

His mornings remained unchanged.

But his evenings grew deeper.

He built small tools. Simple scripts. Programs that searched quietly across the network. Programs that listened.



He drew diagrams on paper - large ones that filled entire pages. Lines connecting circles. Networks branching outward like nervous systems.

The internet looked less chaotic when drawn by hand.

It looked manageable.

Sometimes, late at night, he would whisper to the empty room: "everything is connected."

The phrase comforted him.

Then, gradually, it excited him.

The idea arrived slowly. At first it seemed absurd.

But analog systems taught him something important: large machines were just assemblies of small parts.

A clock was not complicated if you understood the gears.

What, then, was the internet?

Just gears.

Millions of them.

Servers. Routers. Protocols.

Machines trusting other machines.

Analogman filled notebook after notebook with plans. His handwriting grew tighter, more intense.

He mapped data centers. He studied vulnerabilities.

He imagined a moment - one precise moment - when a chain of commands would move through the network like a signal through copper wire.

Tick.

Tick.

Tick.

And then -

Control.

His schedule expanded again.

19:30 — preparation

20:00 — network study

22:15 — system mapping

23:59 — planning

The clocks in his apartment multiplied. All analog.

He liked hearing them tick together.

It sounded like synchronization.

One night he stood in front of the closet of identical clothes and stared at the perfect rows.

Order.

That was the real problem with the internet.

No order.

Too many users. Too many signals. Noise everywhere.

People posting, sending, sharing - chaos.



Analogman placed his hand on the closet door.  
“Machines need structure,” he said softly.  
Then he corrected himself.  
“No. The world does.”

Months later his notebooks filled an entire shelf.  
He had discovered something out of the ordinary. At first he thought it was a weakness in forgotten systems. Old servers still running outdated software. Routing paths no one monitored anymore.

But what he found instead was something amazing.

A Digital World of sorts with countless fragments of data. Their movement behavior reminded him of an ant population. Moving back and forth, no wasted motion, trying to fulfill tasks.  
But what were they? Why were they there? And where did they come from?

A moment of silence.

Analogman thought of this as a chance.  
Loose screws in the great machine. His plan became precise.

Not destruction.

Alignment.  
He would not break the network.  
He would steer it.  
Filter it.  
Correct it.

Control it.

He could become the new ruler of these digital lifeforms - in his mind, he already was.

One evening, while reviewing his diagrams, he noticed something strange.  
His schedules had begun drifting.  
He woke at 5:58 instead of 5:59.  
He drank coffee at 6:02.  
The change irritated him. But then he viewed it as a sign.  
He opened a fresh notebook page and wrote:

“DAY OF TRANSMISSION. TAKING CONTROL”

The letters pressed so hard the pen nearly tore the paper.  
The clocks around him ticked louder than usual.  
He listened carefully.

They sounded like a countdown.

Analogman leaned toward the glowing monitor.  
Lines of code waited in the terminal window - silent, obedient.

Beyond the walls of his small apartment stretched the entire network of the world.  
Millions of machines.  
Millions of gears.  
And most importantly to him - millions of potential digital slaves.



He smiled faintly.

"All systems," he whispered to the empty room, "eventually synchronize."

His finger hovered above the keyboard.

The clocks continued ticking.

Suddenly, the lines of code began moving on their own. They seemed to form into a shape of sorts.

He couldn't believe his eyes but on the screen in front of him appeared a large amount of what seemed to be living beings - although digital.

The majority of them looked like floating balls, carrying a type of blade - on their faces: creepy smiles. Their eyes staring through the screen into Analogman's face.

"My soldiers", he whispered.

In the midst of them - a large creature. It reminded him of Godzilla, but mechanical.

Its eyes began to glow red and almost under a spell, Analogman began typing more and more code...

He stopped.

ENTER.

The clocks stopped ticking. His chair was empty...

*Written by yoshi\_UMR (2025 & 2026)*

*This is a non-profit fan-fiction about the PlayStation game Digimon World (1999).*

*IP belongs to Bandai Namco Entertainment*

